

W

EDI

TO W

RT  
WARREN HASTINGS:

An Essay

BY

LORD MACAULAY.

EDITED FOR HIGH SCHOOL USE, WITH INTRODUCTIONS,  
NOTES, ETC.;

TO WHICH IS APPENDED NOTES ON COMPOSITION, INCLUDING A  
CLASSIFICATION OF THE TECHNICAL CHARACTERISTICS  
OF LITERARY STYLE, ETC.,

AND

AN OUTLINE OF THE PLOT OF

SCOTT'S IVANHOE,

WITH A LIST OF ITS CHIEF PERSONAGES, ETC.

BY

G. MERCER ADAM,

AND

GEORGE DICKSON, M. A.,

*Principal of Upper Canada College.*

---

TORONTO:

THE COPP, CLARK COMPANY, (LIMITED),

1890.

DS473

M15

1890

Entered according to Act of Parliament of Canada, in the year one thousand eight hundred and ninety, by THE COPP, CLARK COMPANY, LIMITED, in the office of the Minister of Agriculture.

ar one thousand eight  
IVED, in the office of

Prefa  
Maca  
India  
Some  
Hint

Ch

# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
Preface .....	ii
Macaulay's Life and the Characteristics of his Writings .....	vii
India before the time of Warren Hastings .....	viii
Some Notes on the Essay .....	xi
Hints on Composition and on the Methods of Literary Criticism ...	xvi

## TEXT OF THE ESSAY.

CHAPTER I.—Hasting's Ancestry and School Life .....	25
II.—First Duties in India—1750-1764 .....	29
III.—Visits England and returns to India .....	32
IV.—Appointed Governor of Bengal .....	34
V.—Bengalee Character described .....	36
VI.—The Double Government dissolved .....	38
VII.—An Empty Treasury .....	41
VIII.—Compact against the Rohillas .....	43
IX.—Devastation of Rohilcund .....	46
X.—Philip Francis and the Junius Letters .....	48
XI.—The Governor-General and the Council .....	50
XII.—Hastings, Impey and Nuncomar .....	55
XIII.—Unsuccessful efforts to remove Hastings .....	59
XIV.—Coote, the Mahrattas and the French .....	62
XV.—Impey's Reign of Terror .....	66
XVI.—The Struggle with Hyder Ali .....	71
XVII.—Benares and the Conflicting Rule .....	74
XVIII.—Cheyte Sing plundered and Benares annexed ...	77
XIX.—Hastings sets covetous eyes on Oude .....	80
XX.—The Chief Justice Recalled .....	84
XXI.—Review of Hastings' Administration .....	86
XXII.—Hastings' Popularity in Bengal .....	90
XXIII.—Takes Final Leave of India .....	93
XXIV.—The Prosecution—Tribute to Burke .....	97
XXV.—Burke defeated on the First Charge .....	100

	PAGE
CHAPTER XXVI.—Fox, Pitt and Sheridan.....	102
XXVII.—The Trial in Westminster Hall .....	106
XXVIII.—Burke's Impeachment of Hastings.....	110
XXIX.—The Acquittal of Hastings .....	113
XXX.—In Retirement—Death .....	118
Annotations on the Essay.....	123 to 139
Chronological Table, and List of Indian Governors .....	140
—	
Analysis of the Plot of Scott's <i>Ivanhoe</i> , with a List of the Principal and Subordinate Characters and Suggestions for Reading the Novel.....	142

PAGE	
.....	102
.....	106
gs.....	110
.....	113
.....	118
.....	123 to 139
.....	140
of the Prin-	
s for Reading	
.....	142

## PREFACE.

---

THE Editors of this edition of Macaulay's *Essay on Warren Hastings* have prepared the work to meet the wants of those who intend going up for the Matriculation Examinations in English Composition, for the year 1891, at the Universities. The literary student is to be congratulated on the selection, for the second time by Toronto University, of a work so attractive as this in English prose, at once interesting in matter and animated in style. He is also to be congratulated on the fact that an English Classic is placed on the Curriculum not for grammatical dissection, nor even for critical study, in its literary and rhetorical aspects, but as material for exercises in English Composition.

While this special object has been kept in view, the Editors have not been unmindful of the many difficulties, literary and historical, which the *Essay* presents to the reader. In the endeavour to meet these, the Editors have supplied in the Introductions and Annotations such helps as they have deemed essential, and which the slender resources of a student's library do not usually furnish. To facilitate reading and aid the memory in retaining what has been read, the text of the *Essay* has been broken into chapters, the headings of which may serve, in some degree, as Themes for Composition.

With Macaulay's *Essay*, Scott's *Ivanhoe* has for the same year been bracketed, as an additional prose work, with which the candidate is expected to familiarize himself, and on which his powers of writing an English Prose composition will be tested. To aid the student in his reading of the novel, an outline of its plot has been furnished, with a list of its principal characters and some observations on its historical setting.

Appended to the work is a brief classification of the technical characteristics of literary style, and a few hints on its intellectual, emotional, and æsthetic qualities, together with an enumeration of the chief Figures of Speech, deemed essential to the young student in comprehending the *technique* of literary criticism.

In prescribing the Prose Work for English Composition in the several years, the Curriculum of Toronto University enjoins on Candidates for Matriculation that nothing but an essay will be required based on the work or works for the year. This, the Curriculum adds, "shall be dealt with rather as a test of the candidate's power of English composition than as a proof of his knowledge of the subject written upon. Legible writing and correct spelling and punctuation will be regarded as indispensable, and special attention will be paid to the structure of sentences and paragraphs. The examiner will allow a choice of subjects, some of which must be based on the selections named with which the candidate is expected to familiarize himself by careful reading." The Editors deem it proper to call the attention of those using the present book to this requirement of the University authorities.

TORONTO, July, 1890.

he technical  
its intellec  
with an ene  
ential to the  
of literary

## MACAULAY'S LIFE, AND THE CHARACTERISTICS OF HIS WRITINGS.

---

position in  
sity enjoined  
n essay will  
c. This, the  
test of the  
proof of his  
writing and  
as indispen  
structure of  
w a choice of  
ions named  
e himself by  
all the atten  
ment of the

THOMAS BABINGTON (*Lord*) MACAULAY, one of the greatest masters of English prose, was born at Rothley Temple, Leicestershire, October 25th, 1800. His father, Zachary Macaulay, was intimately associated with Wilberforce in the emancipation of the West Indian slaves. Macaulay, early in life, gave promise of winning a notable name. As a boy he was precocious and self-confident; though he justified these characteristics by ceaseless reading, by the assiduous cultivation of his mental faculties, and by the exercise of a memory phenomenal in its strength. His university career at Cambridge was not distinguished for profound scholarship: he was rather a desultory student, and preferred to win success in his own paths. English literature was the field in which he chose to seek honours, and there he won them, as well as within the circle of a literary society attached to the College, where he shone in debate. In 1822 he took his B.A. degree, and two years afterwards obtained a College Fellowship.

On leaving the University Macaulay studied law and was called to the bar. Literature, however, was his lodestar, and in the arena of letters he had already achieved a name. His contributions to *Knight's Quarterly* had been well received; but public attention was specially directed to the young writer by his article in the *Edinburgh Review* on Milton. This essay was the first of that long series of brilliant contributions to the *Whig Quarterly*, which earned for that periodical its chief reputation. Meanwhile politics was putting forth a rival claim for a hold on Macaulay's talents. In 1830 he entered Parliament; and for four years took an active part in the stirring scenes of the Reform Bill. He was Liberal in politics, and his vehement oratory and great powers of work were of much service to his party at this critical period of Parliamentary history. In 1832 he was appointed a Commissioner of the Board of Control, which represented the Crown in its relation to the East India Company; and two years afterwards he was nominated a member of the Supreme Council of India. The next four years Macaulay spent in Calcutta. To this residence in India, and the impress it made upon the writer's mind, we doubtless owe two of the most brilliant essays in his language.

Returning to England in 1839, Macaulay again entered Parliament, and for a number of years had a seat in the Cabinet. Laborious as were his Ministerial duties, he yet found time to pursue with unflagging ardour his literary work. The essays on Lord Clive and Warren Hastings are the product of this period, as are those admirable specimens of "rhymed rhetoric," the *Lays of Ancient Rome*. But alternate legislating and electioneering were not favourable to literary composition; and Macaulay was ambitious to do more than write essays and compose verse. He had long cherished the idea of writing a History of England; and, fortunately for literature, Parliamentary defeats and loss of office gave him the leisure, though now late in the day, to put his wish into effect. From now to the close of his life, with a brief interruption incident to his temporary return to politics, Macaulay threw his whole heart into the writing of his History. Few Englishmen at the time were so deeply versed as he in the country's annals; and none had hitherto hit the idea of making history popular, or were able to treat it with such picturesque effect. Alas! he lived to see but four volumes published; the fifth, a fragment, appeared posthumously, for, at the close of 1859, the brain that had woven the wonderful fabric had ceased its functions. Its author died Baron Macaulay; and on the 9th of January, 1860, his remains were interred with impressive pomp in the Poets' Corner in Westminster Abbey.

The social aspects of Macaulay's life present some very loveable traits. His attachment to his sister, Lady Trevelyan, and the fond indulgence of a bachelor-uncle to her children, are prominent features in his biography and pleasingly attest his affectionate disposition and warmth of heart. The "Life and Letters," by his nephew, Mr. Trevelyan, is one of the most admirable biographies in the language, and should be read by all admirers of the great historian, orator, and essayist.

Macaulay is the most pictorial prose-writer in English literature. His power of graphic narration has rarely been equalled and never surpassed. With wide and accurate knowledge, and the faculty of readily bringing it to his aid, he has enriched the literature of history and biography with scenes and studies that bid fair to have perennial life. He was a typical Englishman; and his writings, both historical and literary, deal with subjects that interest the national mind and enlist the sympathies of the national heart. His power of reproducing the past is great; and the impression he leaves on the mind of the reader is vivid and lasting. His work always tells, for it is hearty and genuine. Nor is it ever timidly put forth, but invariably with confidence and conviction. In

tered Parliament. Laborious as were his statements that does injustice to facts. At times one has to stand off with unflagging from his work to get its proper focus, and to see his facts out of the glare of his rhetoric. But he has painted many striking pictures, and imbued with fresh life many forgotten incidents and memorable figures of the past.

But alternate The characteristics of Macaulay's style are strength and clearness. It is said that he never wrote but one obscure sentence in his life. With equal truth it may be affirmed that he never penned a weak one. In reading Macaulay one often sighs, indeed, for an hour of langour, and for a passage of quiet repose. But there is as little of repose as there is of emotion. The tenderness that was in his nature he never imparts to his books. We have the firm hand of the robust rhetorician, but never the soft touch of the idealist or the poet. Macaulay has no acute sensibilities; and hence in his writings there is little of humour and less of pathos. Yet every page is instinct with life, bright with colour, and affluent of illustration. From every nook of literature he brings something to enrich his narrative and ornament his work. Not only are his facts inexhaustible, but inexhaustible also are the resources of his art. On canvas there may be daubs of colour, but the man and the scene he sets out to paint he always succeeds in making live before one. The process may be mechanical and the details too minute, but the result nevertheless is art.

The essay on Warren Hastings exemplifies both the merits and the defects of Macaulay as a writer. Though somewhat overloaded with ornament, the narrative is clear-cut, forcible and brilliant. It displays vast and varied knowledge, and is enriched with apt, if profuse, illustration. But Macaulay rarely brings out the deeper significance of events, and seldom looks into the heart for the motive of his actors. Not only is there an absence of the analytic habit, there is often a narrowness of view, and not infrequently poverty of thought. He is seldom original, and never profound. To the ordinary reader this is concealed by an animated style, and by a florid and abundant rhetoric.

Macaulay's fondness for antithetical writing often detracts from his sense of justice, and leads him unfairly to praise one man by defaming another. In one other respect his work is defective: as the artists say, his pictures want atmosphere; he gets too near to the canvas, and, consequently, there is a lack of perspective. But despite these defects Macaulay is a great and attractive writer. He is always in earnest, and his industry makes his work thorough, if not at all times accurate. The national history may yet be written more scientifically, but never with a sturdier patriotism or with more enthusiasm and fire.

## INDIA BEFORE THE TIME OF WARREN HASTINGS.

British settlement in India practically dates from the year 1600, when the East India Company was founded. A hundred years earlier the Spaniards, the Portuguese, and the Dutch, actuated by the spirit of enterprise of the time, were all eager to reach the Indies, and to bring home some of its fabled wealth. During the whole of the 16th century the Portuguese had the monopoly of trade in the East. When the crowns of Portugal and Spain were for a time united the national interests of Portugal were merged in Spanish conquest in the West, and her Asiatic trade passed into the hands of the English and the Dutch. Competition between the two latter Powers for the commerce of India was in the 17th century keen and on both sides aggressive. But in 1758 the tide turned in favour of Britain, when Clive, at Chinsurah, forced the Dutch to capitulate. Sixty years later Dutch trade on the mainland of India received its death blow, when England, during the great French wars, from 1793 to 1811, won all the colonies of Holland.

But England had other rivals besides the Portuguese and the Dutch in the trade of the Orient. France had early laid covetous eyes on the wealth of the Indies, and possessed a Trading Company in the East under charter of the French Crown. There were also various English companies formed for trading purposes in India and the Indian Archipelago. In 1709 the two chief companies were amalgamated, and were henceforth known as the "East India Company." At successive periods this great corporation obtained a renewal of its charter, though its powers were more or less modified as time went on, until the year 1858, when the Company and its affairs were transferred to the British Crown. On some of the islands of the Indian Archipelago the Company established factories, or houses of trade, which ere long brought its servants into collision with the Portuguese and the Dutch. In 1623 occurred the massacre by the Dutch at Amboyna, which drove the English from the Spice Islands to the mainland of India. The Company soon obtained a footing on the Coromandel coast, where it erected Fort St. George, its first territorial possession, and the nucleus of the later city of Madras. Settlements were ere long effected at Bombay, at Fort William (Calcutta), at Moorshedabad, once the capital of Bengal, and at various points on the Hooghly, a navigable branch of the Ganges. The French also made good their foothold in the country, establishing themselves at Chandernagore, just above Calcutta, and at Pondicherry, a hundred miles south of Madras.

## ASTINGS.

near 1600, when  
 ars earlier the  
 y the spirit of  
 and to bring  
 e 16th century  
 t. When the  
 the national  
 the West, and  
 d the Dutch.  
 merce of India  
 But in 1758  
 surah, forced  
 the mainland  
 g the great  
 alland.

l the Dutch  
 eyes on the  
 in the East  
 ous English  
 dian Archi-  
 , and were  
 successive  
 er, though  
 l the year  
 he British  
 e Company  
 ough its

In 1623  
 drove the  
 The Com-  
 t erected  
 s of the  
 Bombay,  
 apital of  
 h of the  
 country,  
 and at

At first the English East India Company pursued its trade by permission of the native princes, whose rights it for a time respected, though the cupidity of the Company and its employes were ere long utterly to disregard both political and commercial morality. The rivalry of the trading companies of other nations, particularly the French, soon introduced discord into the country, and with it a factor of no inconsiderable account in the spoliation of India. Its fruit was soon seen in setting the native rulers by the ears, in deposing some, and extorting from others immense sums of money and ere long their territorial possessions. The trading companies were greedy and their servants unscrupulous. Such was the position of affairs in India when, in 1744, war broke out in Europe between England and France. At this time M. Dupleix, the French Governor of Pondicherry, was ambitious that the rule of his countrymen should be the dominant one in India. The English were the special objects of the Governor's designs; and in 1746 Madras surrendered to a French squadron which was then cruising on the coast. In 1748 it was however restored to Britain.

Meanwhile the whole of Southern India, on the fall of the Mogul power at Delhi, had become practically independent; and in the Deccan the Nizam-ul-Mulk was founding at Hyderabad a hereditary dynasty. The Carnatic, the lowland district lying between the central plateau and the Eastern Sea, was governed by a deputy of the Nizam, known as the Nawab of Arcot. To the south lay Mysore, Tanjore, and Trichinopoli, which were all seats of independent Hindoo power. On the death, in 1748, of Nizam-ul-Mulk, the "War of Succession" to the throne of the Deccan, referred to in Macaulay's Essay, began to rage. The English supported the claim of Nasir Jung, a son of the late ruler; while it suited the purpose of the French Governor, Dupleix, to maintain the cause first of one grandson and then of another. In like manner, to the subordinate sovereignty of Arcot, the French and English advanced the interests of rival claimants. The former upheld the pretensions of Chunder Sahib, while the latter countenanced those of Mahommed Ali. To end the trouble, which was a source of danger to Madras, and to cripple the influence of France in the Carnatic, the English directed Clive, who had come to India in 1743, to proceed with a small but brave force to seize Arcot. Clive's capture and subsequent defence of the place was the first of his great military achievements. From that period French power in the East begun to decline; and its overthrow occurred nine years later, when Sir Eyre Coote won the victory of Wandewash, and in the following year starved Pondicherry into a surrender.

The scene now shifts to Bengal, and to the advent of Warren Hastings. In 1740 the hereditary succession to the throne of the Province had been broken by a usurper, who died in 1756. His grandson, Surajah Dowlah, a hot-headed youth of eighteen, became Nawab of Bengal. The Court was at Moorshedabad, contiguous to Cossimbazar and the European factories on the Hooghly. Down the river, at Calcutta, there was by this time a large settlement of English. Suddenly the city was seized by a panic on the appearance at its gates of an army of the Nawab. On the pretext of capturing a relative, who had escaped from his vengeance, Surajah Dowlah had marched upon and invested Calcutta with his forces. Most of the English fled down the river in their ships; though about 150 of them were captured and flung for the night into the military jail at Fort William. Only 23 emerged on the morrow from the horrors of the "Black Hole."

While this tragic occurrence took place Clive was at Madras with the British fleet. On hearing of the calamity he instantly set out for the mouth of the Ganges, and Calcutta was promptly recovered. The Nawab fortunately consented to a peace and made ample compensation for British losses. But Clive soon found the opportunity to settle accounts more satisfactorily with Surajah Dowlah. War having again broken out between France and England, the hero of Arcot made it the pretext to seize the French settlement on the Hooghly of Chandernagore. This enraged the Nawab; and in hot haste he took up the cause of the French. Clive, acting upon the policy of the Governor of Pondicherry, put forward a rival claimant for the throne. Resort was had to arms. At Plassy, about 70 miles north of Calcutta, the die was cast; and Clive with less than a tenth of Dowlah's army met and scattered it to the winds. Placing Meer Jaffier on the throne of Bengal, Clive dictated his own terms on elevating him to the position, and the East India Company practically became masters of the Province.

Little remains now to be said, for Warren Hastings comes at this period upon the scene, and Macaulay's Essay takes up the thread of the narrative. Plassy was fought on the 23rd of June, 1757: and in the following year Clive was appointed by the Court of Directors Governor of the Company's settlements in Bengal. The incidents connected with the dethronement of Meer Jaffier, the revolt of Meer Casim, and the reconquest of Bengal, brings the story of British occupation well on in the career of Hastings. These and subsequent stirring events brought out the resources of that famed administrator; and, with Clive's military genius, make the history of the period a notable one in the annals of India.

## SOME NOTES ON THE ESSAY.

Lord Macaulay's essay on Warren Hastings is one of his most notable contributions to the *Edinburgh Review*, where it appeared in October, 1841. Early in the previous year its writer had contributed to the same periodical his hardly less famous essay on Lord Clive, which should be read in connection with that on Warren Hastings, that the student may be familiar with the military achievements which in part precede, and in part run contemporary with, Hastings' lengthy and brilliant rule in India. The two men who were to become the founders of Britain's greatness in the East, and who, despite the stains on their character, figure grandly in the Anglo-Indian history of the eighteenth century, were, for the space of some seventeen years, actors together in the civil and military administration of India. How their careers for a time interlace will best be seen by reproducing the dates in connection with the lives of both men. Clive was born in 1725; he made his first voyage to India in 1743; and finally quitted the East in 1767. He died in England by his own hand in 1774. Warren Hastings was Clive's junior by only seven years; he made his first voyage to India in 1750; and, with a visit of four years' duration to England, was for thirty-five years in the East India Company's service, during thirteen of which he had charge of the affairs of the Indian Empire. Returning to England in 1785, he spent there the remainder of a long and chequered life, dying in the year 1818.

Macaulay's personal knowledge of India, and his vast fund of historical and literary research, were, no doubt inducing motives in his taking up the Malcolm and Gleig biographies of these heroes of Indian history as themes for an historical essay and studies of portraiture for the pages of the great Whig Quarterly. Britain's Indian Empire, with its barbaric wealth and glitter, the splendour of its temples, courts and palaces, the pageantry and stately ceremonial by which the native princes were surrounded, together with all the glamour of the East, formed a group of subjects well fitted to attract Macaulay's love of the picturesque and give scope for graphic writing. The achievements of the British arms, the successive conquests over the native tribes, the thrilling stories of peril and daring, the knavery of Indian intrigue, and the counter-diplomacy of the English military chiefs, were further subjects well calculated to enlist the ardour of a patriotic historian and

furnish material for brilliant literary effects. It is just here that the student needs to be on his guard against Macaulay, and to take care that the fascination of his style and the brilliance of his stately sentences do not lead him astray in the estimate he desires to form of the events described in his pages, and falsify his judgment of the chief actors who play their part in the narrative. This is particularly necessary in reading the essay on Warren Hastings, where Macaulay delights in marked contrasts, and glorifies his hero by throwing into the deepest shade those who were either his tools or who opposed him in the questionable methods by which he won success. It is this love for startling antitheses, combined at times with a too pronounced partisanship, that detracts from Macaulay's merits as a portrait painter and historian, however spirited may be his narrative, dazzling his eloquence, and great the wealth of the historical and literary illustration he lavishes upon his work. Few, however, will fail to be captivated by the polish of the language, the vigour and perspicuity of statement, the telling turns of argument, and the succession and rhythmic flow of the glowing periods. Nor, despite what we have said of Macaulay's partisanship, and the artificial graces and noisy brilliance of many of his sentences, will the reader fail to note the essayist's manifest desire to mete out justice to the figures on his canvas, or remain unstirred while he vigorously applies the lash to meanness and deceit. The value he sets upon uprightness of character, straightforwardness of action, purity of living, and all that is noble and unselfish in human nature, is indeed a high one; though at times he sadly qualifies his ideal by an ingenuity of defence and a sophistry of language when dealing with crime that too often reveals the advocate and throws a cloud over the moral sense. But this is at once the weakness and the strength of Macaulay; and our estimate of his work, like our estimate of such a character as Warren Hastings, must not be upon a single trait of the man, but upon the individual as a whole, and upon the completed work he has left behind him.

It is fifty years since Macaulay's Essay was written, and we now see a little more clearly the difficulties of the position in which Warren Hastings was placed. Historical research has meanwhile also brought to light much that hitherto was mere conjecture in regard to the transactions of the period, or are the animadversions of a partisan judgment. India a hundred years ago was deemed more emphatically than it is to-day "a distant, alien, and usurped dominion," and the theory then, and perhaps truthfully held, was that "only the force wielded and the fear inspired by arbitrary rule could maintain it."

"In the eighteenth century," says Sir Alfred Lyall in his admirable monograph on Warren Hastings, in the English Men of Action Series, "the question of governing India from London presented in the highest degree all the difficulties and enigmas inherent in the administration of dependencies that are separated from the sovereign State by distance, by differences of religion, race, climate, and by the strongest possible contrast of social ideas and political traditions." This the essayist not only saw, but he gave Hastings the benefit of the impression it made upon his mind, in the portraiture he has left us of the great Anglo-Indian Proconsul. Not only does he recognise the fact that when Hastings first came upon the scene English rule in the East was characterized by all kinds of extortion, and that the sordid company, whose servant he was, looked upon India only as a field to poach in; but he at the same time places the Governor-General in the midst of his difficult and entangling surroundings, having, figuratively, to make bricks without straw, and administer the affairs of a great trust, fighting, for the most part, with his back to the wall, with a Council Board which, so far from helping him, was a constant perplexity and menace. Macaulay, however, is not careful to give Hastings the full benefit of this view of the case when he comes to deal with the impeachment and the overcharged rhetoric of the impassioned orators for the prosecution. The national inquisition gives him the opportunity, which he evidently coveted, for indulging in picturesque writing, in unison, as he thought, with the tragic declamation of Burke, Fox, and Sheridan; though a soberer judgment to-day deems the whole proceedings of the trial vexatious, and the language of the prosecution what Pitt at the time censured it for being—"violent and unfair." A great modern legal authority speaks of the impeachment as "a blot on the judicial history of the country." "It is monstrous," writes Sir James Stephen, in his *History of Criminal Law*, "that a man should be tortured at irregular intervals for seven years in order that a singularly incompetent tribunal might be addressed before an excited audience by Burke and Sheridan, in language far removed from the calmness with which an advocate for the prosecution ought to address a criminal court." More open still to criticism is the Essay when its author comes to consider the relations between Hastings and some of the personages with whom he was in alliance.

Towards Sir Elijah Impey, Macaulay is now known to have been grossly unfair. He deems him a mere tool of the Governor-General, and in the Essay he has loaded him with reproach and obloquy. In treating of the alleged compact with Hastings, by which Impey, as

he affirms, became rich and infamous, the historian steeps his pen in gall and writes of the Chief Justice as if he were the greatest felon unhung. Nor is he a whit more lenient when he comes to deal with the plundering of the Begums of Oude, for he again charges the Chief Justice with crimes that stain the robes of his office "by the peculiar rankness of their infamy." The extravagant and partisan judgment of the brilliant essayist is only equalled by Burke's biting invective when he impeached Hastings at the Bar of the House of Commons. There the impassioned orator flung at the incriminated Governor-General every epithet of contumely and scorn. It is now, however, very certain that many counts in the indictment of both Hastings and Impey were cruelly unjust, as well as malignantly aspersive. The alleged compact between them for what was termed the judicial murder of Nuncomar had really no existence; and most of the charges brought against them by their sleepless enemy, Sir Philip Francis, are now believed to be virulently untrue. The whole Nuncomar case has recently been probed to the bottom, and the exoneration of the Governor-General and the Chief Justice is deemed both explicit and complete. Sir James Fitzjames Stephens has made the most searching and exhaustive inquiry into the matter, and has examined every document and fact relating to it. His conviction is that Nuncomar's trial was perfectly fair, and that there was no sort of conspiracy or understanding between Hastings and the Chief Justice to get rid of the Bengalee; nor, as he believes, had Hastings anything whatever to do with the prosecution. Sir James makes this further statement exonerating the Chief Justice:—"I have read everything," he says, "I could find throwing light on Impey's character, and it appears to me that he was neither much blacker nor much whiter, in whole or in part, than his neighbours. I have read through all his letters and private papers, and I can find in them no trace of corruption. . . . When his conduct in the different matters objected to is fully examined I think it will appear that, if the whole of his conduct is not fully justified, he at least is to be honourably acquitted of the tremendous charges which Macaulay has brought against him."

Thus is conclusively disposed of, we venture to think, not only the odious imputation on Impey as a judge, but the dishonour cast on Hastings by the charge of complicity with the Chief Justice, in taking foul means to get rid of an influential native dignitary who was obnoxious to both. Macaulay's indictment in the case would seem to fall completely to the ground, and a controversy is thus set at rest which has raged intermittently for close upon a hundred years. In

steeps his pen toward to other matters in Hastings' career there was, no doubt, cause for the greatest felicity; but it must now, we think, be said that the mode of dealing with the manner of it were inconsistent with fair play and with proper consideration for the resplendent services of the whilom Master of all India. "by the peculiar many of Hastings' acts no one would venture to defend; but though the partisan judgment of despotic and often unscrupulous, he was neither a political gamester nor a brigand. Whatever he was, Macaulay does not fail, on the whole, to do him justice. His administration reduced chaos to order, gave some measure of security to life and property, widened the area of British jurisdiction, and implanted in the breasts of a restive people the fear of English prowess, and in the hearts of knaves a wholesome dread of the English name.

Commons. There  
Governor-General  
ever, very certain  
and Impey were  
alleged compact  
er of Nuncomar  
ght against them  
v believed to be  
tly been probed  
eneral and the  
Sir James Fitz-  
austive inquiry  
act relating to  
fair, and that  
Hastings and  
believes, had  
t. Sir James  
e:—"I have  
t on Impey's  
blackier nor  
I have read  
l in them no  
rent matters  
he whole of  
honourably  
as brought

ot only the  
ur cast on  
in taking  
who was  
l seem to  
et at rest  
ears. In

## NOTES ON ENGLISH COMPOSITION.

How the writing of English can best be acquired is a question not easily answered. Text-books and intelligent training will do something, but practice and the study of good models will, admittedly, do more. The first step is to train the pupil to think. If at first, which is likely to be the case, the pupil cannot use his reflective powers so as to provide himself with material for a theme in Composition, he may with advantage be referred to some pregnant passage occurring in the works of a good writer. He should be asked to gather the substance of the writer's argument in the passage, and to translate it into his own words. The paraphrase he may then commit to paper. Varied practice of this sort, with the corrections and counsel of a good teacher, will do more to impart facility in writing than any number of rules, or a lengthy course of grammatical exposition, however good. In English Composition, as in other branches of education, much more may be attained by oral than by text-book teaching. There are a few hints, however, that may be useful to the pupil, which we here venture to set forth, with the remark that, in this as in other studies, little can be done without the pupil's exercise of his own mental powers, or without taste in the selection and assiduity, as we have said, in the reading of good literary models.

Before beginning a practical course of English Composition, the teacher will do well to impress upon the pupil's mind the following requisites to success in the writing of English, mastery of which, in his exercises and practice, the learner should endeavour to gain : (1) Familiarity with the subject to be written about ; (2) Some notion of method in the arrangement of topics, and natural sequence of ideas in treating of them ; (3) A fair English vocabulary (the simpler the better) ; (4) An accurate knowledge of the meanings of words and phrases ; (5) Some degree of taste and sense of propriety in the language used ; (6) Such an acquaintance with the rules of grammar as will keep one from violating syntax ; and (7) " A ready perception of the beauties of language and of those things that tend to make it most effective for its purpose."

With these general ideas impressed upon the mind of the pupil, and with preliminary practice in sentence-building, including exercises in variations of its structure, phraseology, and sequence, he may go on to

the composition of the paragraph, and to the analysis of its properties—unity, consecutiveness, and variety. From these he may proceed to exercises on theme writing, and to lessons on the qualities of style, particularly in its essentials of perspicuity and strength. In the exercises on the analysis of style the utmost care should be taken to make criticism on the mere mechanism of the language subordinate to the all-important consideration of the thought and aim of the writer, which is the essence of every literary work. While a student of literature, should not be forgotten that the pupil is also a student of the world; that he is being prepared to enter upon a life of thought and action for himself; and that the pedantry which makes so much of school work in the grammatical construction of the language is a poor substitute, as a means of training, for those impressive lessons, both of principle and sentiment, which happily abound in English literature, and are its most distinguished characteristics. Nor should it be forgotten that over-attention to the minutiae of criticism prevents the pupil from forming just or adequate conceptions of an author's work, and, in the case of a masterpiece of literature, limits his vision of its large and general aspects.

In proceeding to theme-writing, the teacher's care, after he has seen to the grammatical purity of the pupil's compositions, should be chiefly directed to the supervision of their rhetorical qualities. A heavy hand will here be needed, as the tendency of imaginative youth is to run riot among the flowers of the language. The first requisites he should exact are Simplicity and Clearness; after that may come Strength. Perhaps no better rules can be given, as directions to the pupil in attaining these requisites, than the old and simple ones of Lindley Murray, which we fear are, in these modern days, not so familiar as they ought to be, and hence may here be quoted:

1. "Avoid," says Lindley Murray, "all such words and phrases as are not adapted to the ideas you mean to communicate, or which are less significant than others, of those ideas."

2. During the course of the sentence the scene should be changed as little as possible, i.e. (do not let the mind be hurried by sudden transitions from person to person, or from subject to subject.)

3. Never crowd into one sentence things which have so little connection that they could bear to be divided into two or three sentences; and keep clear of all unnecessary parentheses.

4. For promoting the strength of a sentence, prune it of all redundant words and members; much force is added to a sentence by brevity.

5. Attend, particularly to the use of copulatives, relatives, and all the particles employed for transition and connection.

6. Dispose of the capital word, or words, so that they may make the greatest impression; and, when the subject admits of it, attend to the climax of a sentence.

7. A weaker assertion or proposition should never come after a stronger; when a sentence consists of two members, the longer should generally be the concluding one.

8. Avoid concluding a sentence with an adverb, a preposition, or any inconsiderable word; and be careful not to misplace an adverb.

[There is no word in the English language, says a modern authority in grammar, which is so frequently misplaced as *only*. Hence, it is important to lay down the rule with regard to it: "Only" limits the word or words immediately following it. Alone limits the word or words immediately preceding it.]

9. In the members of a sentence, where two things are compared or contrasted with one another, whether either a resemblance or an opposition is intended to be expressed, some resemblance in the language and construction should be preserved. When the things themselves correspond to each other, we naturally expect to find a similar correspondence in the words.

10. Attend to the harmony and easy flow of the words and members.

11. The same word should not be repeated too often in the same sentence or paragraph, though the sense should not be sacrificed to avoid repetition.

12. Long and short sentences should be agreeably interspersed in a paragraph: to ear tires of a number of sentences of similar construction following each other with monotonous regularity.

In setting themes for composition the teacher will do well at first to avoid subjects that make unusual demands upon the pupil's powers of reflection, unless they are familiar to him. Narrative composition, on some incident or story; on some familiar object or feature of local interest; or on some character in, or event of, history; will be found much more suitable. At first a skeleton, or scheme of arrangement in the topics, should be supplied, such as the following:

*In Biography*: 1, Place and circumstances of birth; 2, Youth and education; 3, Occupation of life, and circumstances determining that occupation; 4, Progress in life-work; 5, Death and attendant circumstances; and 6, Reflections on the character, and lessons drawn from the life, passed under review.

*In History*: 1, The event itself; 2, Cause or occasion of it; 3, The time and place; 4, The manner of its happening and attendant circumstances; and 5, The result: what it produced or effected.

In the essay on Warren Hastings, in the following pages, abundant material will be found for composition themes, in both historical and biographical narration. The more prominent of these themes will be found in the headings of the chapters. As an exercise to the pupil, and that it may tend to familiarise him with the work he may be called upon to do, in writing compositions on the essay, the following model of a paragraph, enlarged from an outline of the life of Lord Clive, is herewith added. The model is taken from Dalglish's "English Composition" (Edinburgh: Oliver & Boyd), a work that may be recommended to the teacher. The space taken up with the example is more

may make the great climax of a sentence, after a stronger; who may be the concluding one, or any inconsiderable incident, as the incidents of the sketch will be of interest to the student who proceeds to the study of the essay on Warren Hastings.

## EXAMPLE.—LORD CLIVE.

## 1. Outline.

- Description:* The founder of the British Empire in India.  
*Narrative:* Born at Styche (Shropshire), 1725—idle and mischievous at school—goes to Madras—clerk in the E. I. Company—disgusted with the monotony of office life—welcomes the call to military service—English influence in India very low—great success of Clive's exploits—Arcot, 1751—Plassey, 1757—great reputation—returns to England, 1760—made an Irish peer—affairs go wrong in his absence—sent out to put them right, 1764—restores perfect order in eighteen months—returns to England, 1767—his conduct and administration assailed, 1773—acquitted—commits suicide, 1774.  
*Character:* Great warrior and able statesman—resolute and uncompromising—often unscrupulous—always successful. The effects of his labours.

## 2. Paragraph.

"Robert, Lord Clive, Baron of Plassey, the founder of the British Empire in India, was born at Styche, in Shropshire, in 1725. At school, he showed greater aptitude for mischief and acts of recklessness than for learning; and it was a relief to his parents to get him safely shipped off to India in 1744. He entered the civil service of the Company at Madras, at a time when its prosperity had sunk to a very low ebb; and the monotony of his sedentary life so depressed him, that he oftener than once attempted to commit suicide. When French encroachment and intrigue rendered it necessary to take measures to save English influence from total extinction, Clive gladly welcomed the call to active service. His change of profession marks an epoch in the history of India. From the day when he assumed the sword, English interests began sensibly to revive. His first great exploit was the capture and defence of Arcot, with only 500 men, 300 of whom were natives. His crowning triumph was the victory of Plassey, which laid Bengal at the feet of the English. His own reputation was now firmly established, and his name became everywhere a tower of strength. On his return to England in 1760, he received the thanks of the Company, and an Irish peerage from Government. But affairs went wrong in his absence, and in 1764, the Company sent him out again to set them right. This, by his vigorous measures, he very soon succeeded in doing. In the course of eighteen months, perfect order was restored; and on his final return to England, in 1767, he was received with the distinction which his great services deserved. But his reforms had given offence to many of those who had profited by the former laxity of affairs; and it is to be regretted that not a few of his acts were of so questionable a character as to give his enemies a handle against him. In 1773, his administration was made the subject of a Parliamentary inquiry. The decision was in his favour; but he was dissatisfied with the terms of the acquittal; and the mere fact of his having been put upon his trial affected him so deeply, that he sought relief in suicide, November 22nd, 1774. Clive was one of the greatest warrior-statesmen of whom England can boast. Bold, resolute, and rapid as a soldier, he was equally calm, judicious, and comprehensive as an administrator. It cannot be denied that he was often unscrupulous in opposing cunning with cunning; but he was not cruel; he was not selfish; and his faults have been condoned by the success of his career, and by the splendid services he rendered to his country."

The "Art of Authorship," and the methods of professional work among literary men, have lately been the theme of a compilation by a young journalist, from whose volume the editors extract the following useful hints :—

"The main thing in writing," says Professor Blackie, "is to have distinct and clear and well-marshalled ideas, and then to express them simply and without affectation. This forms what we may call the bones of a good style. Then you must study to give colour by apt images and warmth by natural passion and earnestness. The music of words and the cadence of sentences is a matter which depends on the ear. Above all things monotony in the form of the sentences is to be shunned; variety means wealth and always pleases. Condensation also ought to be particularly studied, and a loose, rambling, ill-compacted form of sentence ought to be avoided."

"To try to be striking new, fine, is all faulty," says D. C. Murray, the novelist. "Try to see clearly, to speak justly, and you are on the road to a style. 'Idiom is the cream of language.' Use common forms for thoughts that have often been expressed. Avoid foreign phrases and scraps of the dead languages. There is nothing which can be said at all which cannot be said in English. Be simple and unpretentious. If you get all your goods into the shop window, you have a poor establishment. Say the thing you see as you see it, and bend the whole power of your mind upon it until you see it well. Avoid newspaper English like a pest. Study the Bible, Bunyan, Defoe, and mark their simplicity, their straightforwardness, their accuracy in the choice of words. Few things are so wonderful as language; few things better worth study."

"For precepts of style," says Goldwin Smith, "you must go to the masters of style, and for lessons in the art of Composition you must go to artists. My only rule is to know what I mean to say, to say it, and have done with it. Clearness and conciseness are within the reach of all of us, though grandeur, beauty, and piquancy are not."

Westland Marston, the dramatist, says, "As to composition, the chief rules I have laid down for myself are to avoid superfluous expressions, to choose epithets carefully and use them sparingly, and to frame sentences neither so long as to be cumbrous, nor so short as to destroy continuity."

J. H. Shorthouse, the author of "John Inglesant," remarks that "in the way of general advice, I can only suggest the taking of infinite pains, and the avoiding, like the plague, any attempts at affectation, or

the use of vulgar, colloquial, penny-a-liner, or what are supposed to be humorous, phrases. I would allow very great latitude in the use of words. Your instinct and taste must be your guide in this. But, above everything, strive to form every sentence so as to express your meaning in the simplest way, and in accordance with the easiest, plainest rules of English Grammar. I am not afraid of a picturesque style, or what is called fine writing, provided you get both grammar and sense."

Another writer observes, that "one must begin at the bottom of the ladder" in acquiring the art of style and of a good prose composition. The first step in this ladder of style is, if one may so call it, the rung of lucidity. The French have a proverb, 'what is obscure is bad French.' I wish we had a corresponding one. But whether we possess the maxim or not, no good English writer, from Swift to De Quincey, has written English hard to be understood. Then, still mounting the ladder, one might, to parody Mr. Ruskin, place the rung of brevity next, and after that the rung of rhythm, and the rungs of beauty, of force, of grace, and of wit, till presently we should reach a height where only genius can tread, and where humbler folk would do wisely not to climb."

## DICTION.

DICTION treats of the selection and the right use of words. This includes:—

1. PURITY of Diction, which requires the word made use of to be—
  - (1) REPUTABLE, that is, used by the best writers and speakers.
  - (2) RECENT, used at the present time.
  - (3) NATIONAL, used by the whole people.

The violation of any of these requirements is called a BARBARISM.

The chief sources of Barbarisms are—

- (1) The unnecessary use of foreign words.
- (2) The use of obsolete words. Ex. : *Yeclaped* for called.
- (3) New words not sanctioned by good usage. Ex. : *Crank* for an eccentric person.
- (4) The unnecessary use of technical words.
- (5) Incorrectly formed words, or Hybrids. Ex. : *Singist*.
- (6) Local or provincial words. Ex. : *Grit*.
- (7) Slang.

2. **PROPRIETY of Diction** consists in choosing words that properly express the intended meaning. The violation of this is called **IMPROPRIETY**. The chief sources of improprieties are—

- (1) Neglect to observe the proper sequence of particles.
- (2) Neglect to distinguish synonyms.
- (3) Carelessness as to the real meaning of words.

The best way to attain propriety of diction is to observe and imitate the usage of the best writers and speakers of the present time.

3. **PRECISION of Diction** consists in choosing from synonymous terms those which best express the ideas to be conveyed.

### THE SENTENCE.

1. **THE PERIODIC SENTENCE** is one in which the sense is held in suspense until the end is reached. The effects of the periodic sentence are—

- (1) To hold the attention until the end of the sentence.
- (2) To secure the right placing of qualifying words and phrases.
- (3) To secure the unity of the sentence.
- (4) To counteract the tendency of our language to use the loose sentence by interspersing the periodic sentence on all suitable occasions.

2. **THE LOOSE SENTENCE** is one in which the ideas are expressed in the order in which they occur to the mind. Its characteristics are—

- (1) That the predicate follows the subject.
- (2) That qualifying adjuncts follow what they qualify.
- (3) That the parts may be separated without destroying the sense. It is the natural structure of the sentence in English.

Macaulay's sentences frequently combine both the loose and the periodic.

3. **THE BALANCED SENTENCE** is made up of two clauses which are similar in form and often contrasted in meaning. Some of the effects of the balanced sentence are—

- (1) *An aid to memory.* The repetition impresses the mind. When the part common to the several statements is learnt, the attention is then directed to the points of difference.

- (2) *An agreeable surprise.* Sameness of form in difference of matter gives a pleasurable impression, or, when a new and distinct meaning can be conveyed in nearly the same words, a feeling of surprise is all the greater.

(3) *Antithesis, or Contrast.*

[As Macaulay is fond of antithesis, that is, the explicit contrasting of things already opposed in meaning, an example from the essay is here given in illustration of its use: *Ex.* "A war of Bengalees against Englishmen was like a war of sheep against wolves, of men against demons."]

4. SENTENCES may be classified also into *short* and *long*.

- (1) The effect of the *short sentence* is to give animation to the style, but when carried to excess it becomes tiresome, and destroys the melody of the composition. It is, however, more easily understood.
- (2) The effect of the *long sentence* is to aid in amplifying an idea; it also gives an opportunity for climax. It requires closer attention, though it is not so easily understood as the short sentence.
- (3) Do not use either the short or the long sentence to excess. They should be used to relieve one another.

The most important qualities of a good sentence are—

1. **CLEARNESS OF MEANING.** The *choice* and *arrangement* of words should be such that the meaning cannot be misunderstood. All modifiers, whether words, phrases or clauses, should be placed as near as possible to the word or words which they limit.
2. **UNITY OF THOUGHT.** The parts of a sentence should be arranged so that unity of thought is maintained as far as possible.
3. **STRENGTH OF EXPRESSION.** The sentence should be so constructed that the thought which it contains shall be expressed with all possible force.

- (1) All words that do not add anything to the meaning should be struck from the sentence.

The violations of brevity are—

- (a) *Tautology*, or the repetition of the same idea in different words.
- (b) *Pleonasm* or *Redundancy*, that is, the use of words not necessary to express the sense.
- (c) *Verbosity*, or a diffuse mode of expression.

- (2) The strength is increased by a careful use of connectives.
- (3) Contrasted members of a sentence should be similar construction.
- (4) The sentence should end, if possible, with a forceful word.
- (5) Effective figures of speech.

These may be classified as follows :—

#### I. FIGURES OF COMPARISON.

- (a) In objects *closely* resembling each other.
  - (a) *Metaphor*, an implied comparison.
  - (β) *Simile*, a comparison stated at length.
- (b) In objects *remotely* resembling each other
  - (a) *Allegory*, a sustained comparison.
  - (β) *Personification*, the comparison of inanimate with animate objects.

#### II. FIGURES OF SUBSTITUTION.

- (a) *Metonymy*, of an accompaniment for the thing it accompanies.
- (b) *Synecdoche*, of a part for the whole, or *vice versa*.

#### III. FIGURES THAT PRESENT THE UNEXPECTED.

- (a) *Antithesis*, the explicit contrasting of things already opposed in meaning.
- (b) *Epigram*, the conflict or contradiction between the form of the language and the meaning really conveyed.
- (c) *Irony*, the saying of what is not meant in order to say more forcibly and clearly what is intended.
- (d) *Hyperbole*, a self-evident exaggeration.
- (e) *Euphemism*, the softening of a harsh or indelicate expression.

#### IV. FIGURES OF THOUGHT.

- (a) *Interrogation*, affirmation or denial, strengthened by being thrown into the form of a question.
- (b) *Exclamation*, a mode of expression evoked by sudden and intense emotion.
- (c) *Apostrophe*, an address to an absent or imaginary auditor, as if he were present.

#### 4. MELODY OF SOUND. This is best secured by—

- (1) Avoiding harsh-sounding effects. The vowels and consonants should blend.

- (2) The alternation of long and short, emphatic and unemphatic, syllables.
- (3) The observance of the principle of variety.
- (4) The words should be so arranged as to give an agreeable cadence at the close of a sentence.
- (5) The Rhythm: The words should be so arranged that the accent shall come at intervals convenient for the reader or speaker.

### THE PARAGRAPH.

A PARAGRAPH is the division of discourse next above the sentence. It is a collection of sentences with unity of purpose; it deals with and exhausts a distinct topic. There is, however, a greater break between one paragraph and another than between the sentences that compose a paragraph.

The laws which govern the construction of the paragraph are:—

- I. *The Law relating to the Theme.* The opening sentence, unless obviously introductory, should indicate the subject of the paragraph.
- II. *The Law of Explicit Reference.* The bearing of each sentence upon what precedes should be clear and unmistakable. This is attained by—
  - (1) The use of suitable connectives—conjunctions, adverbs, pronouns, or connecting phrases.
  - (2) Relation of the sentence without expressing the connecting words, their absence having a distinct meaning. Connectives are unnecessary—
    - (a) When a sentence iterates, or explains, what goes before.
    - (b) Cumulative statements given in succession are presumed to have a common bearing.
    - (c) In the statement of a consequence.
- III. *The Law of Parallel Construction.* When several sentences iterate, or illustrate, the same idea they should be constructed as far as possible alike.
- IV. *The Law of Continuity.* The sentences should be consecutive, or free from *dislocations*; the several thoughts should follow each other in their natural order.

- V. *The Law of Unity.* Every statement in the paragraph should be subservient to the principal affirmation contained in the first sentence. This law forbids digressions and irrelevant matter.
- VI. *The Law of Proportion.* A due proportion should be maintained between the principal and subordinate statements. Everything should have space and prominence according to its importance. Other devices for giving prominence may be used—
- (a) The employment of numerals.
  - (b) Difference in type.
  - (c) Matter of lesser importance may be relegated to footnotes.

#### CHIEF KINDS OF PARAGRAPH.

1. *The Propositional Paragraph*, in which the subject is expressed in the form of a definite assertion, and then developed by proof, illustration, or repetition. This is the common type, and it is constructed on the most regular plan; it is a united whole in itself.
2. *The Amplifying Paragraph*, or one that particularizes or amplifies some statement previously made. The distinctive feature of this kind of paragraph is that the subject is not definitely expressed but has to be gathered from the general bearing of the whole.
3. *The Preliminary Paragraph*, or one that gives the general theme of a chapter, or essay; or lays out the plan of succeeding paragraphs.
4. *The Transitional Paragraph*, or one that is introduced between the principal divisions of a chapter, to mark the end of one line of thought and the beginning of another.

#### KINDS OF COMPOSITION.

1. **DESCRIPTIVE.**—The delineation of the characteristics of any object. It should follow the succession of aspects as they appear to the spectator surveying the whole.
  2. **NARRATIVE**, or a series of events or a succession of views. The scene should not be shifted oftener, or to a greater extent, than is necessary, and the introduction or disappearance of an important agent should be fully accounted for. The narrative should follow the order of events, and the details of events should be relieved and assisted by summaries.
- This process is called abridging, abstracting, or *précis* writing.

**EXPOSITORY.**—The mode of handling applicable to knowledge, or to information pertaining to the *Sciences*. The methods of expounding a general principle or proposition are—

- (a) By *Iteration*, or repeating the statements in different words. This is a means of impressing it.
- (b) By *Obverse Iteration*, or the denial of the contrary.
- (c) By *Examples* or *Particular instances*.
- (d) By *Illustration* as distinguished from *Example*.
- (e) By *Proof* of the Principle.
  - (1) *Inductive*, or proof from facts.
  - (2) *Deductive*, or the application of a more general law to a proof.
- (f) Inferences, deductions, corollaries, consequences, may be drawn from principle to aid the exposition.

**PERSUASION** or **ORATORY** is the influencing of men's minds, conduct and beliefs, by spoken or written address.

**POETRY** is composition written to produce pleasure by means of elevated or impassioned thought or feeling, conveyed in a special artistic form. It differs from prose—

- (1) In possessing a greater variety of *figurative* expressions.
- (2) In an unusual diction; the following are the chief peculiarities of the language of poetry :—
  - (a) It is archaic, and non-colloquial.
  - (b) It prefers images to the mere enumeration of facts.
  - (c) It avoids general terms.
  - (d) It uses epithets instead of the names of things.
  - (e) It is opposed to lengthiness, and is euphonious.
- (3) The chief varieties are Epic, Lyric, Dramatic, Didactic and Satiric.

the paragraph should  
contained in the t  
l irrelevant matter  
should be maintain  
statements. Everyth  
ng to its importan  
e used—

be relegated to fo

subject is expressed  
developed by pro  
mon type, and it  
is a united whole

ularizes or amplifi  
nctive feature of th  
definitely expresse  
ing of the whole.  
the general then  
plan of succeedin

roduced between th  
end of one line

istics of any objec  
they appear to th

on of views. Th  
reater extent, the  
rance of an impor  
e narrative shoul  
f events should l

precis writing.

Y  
no  
a  
cal  
th  
nat  
m  
e  
m  
a  
on  
rdg  
le  
so  
an  
not  
an  
m,  
at  
te  
mit  
o  
me  
To  
des  
dgt  
with  
trul  
the  
.  
ple

# WARREN HASTINGS.\*

## CHAPTER I.

### HASTINGS' ANCESTRY AND SCHOOL LIFE.

We are inclined to think that we shall best meet the wishes of our readers if, instead of minutely examining this book, we attempt to give, in a way necessarily hasty and imperfect, our own view of the life and character of Mr. Hastings. Our feeling towards him is not exactly that of the House of Commons which impeached him in 1787; neither is it that of the House of Commons which uncovered and stood up to receive him in 1813. He had great qualities, and he rendered great services to the State. But to represent him as a man of stainless virtue is to make him ridiculous; and from regard for his memory, if from no other feeling, his friends would have done well to lend no countenance to such adulation. We believe that, if he were now living, he would have sufficient judgment and sufficient greatness of mind to wish to be shown as he was. He must have known that there were dark spots on his fame. He might have felt with pride that the splendour of his fame would bear any spots. He would have wished posterity to have a likeness of him, though an unfavourable likeness, rather than a daub at once insipid and absurd, resembling neither him nor anybody else. "Paint me as I am," said Oliver Cromwell while sitting to young Lely. "If you leave out the scars and wrinkles I will not pay you a shilling." Even in such trifles the great protector shewed both his good-sense and his magnanimity. He did not wish all that was characteristic in his countenance to be lost, in the vain attempt to give him the regular features and smooth blooming cheeks of the curl-pated minions of James the First. He was content that his face should go forth marked with all the demerits which had been put on it by time, by war, by sleepless nights, by anxiety, perhaps by remorse; but with valour, policy, authority, and public care written in all its princely lines. If men truly great knew their own interest, it is thus that they would wish their minds to be portrayed.

\* *Memoirs of the Life of Warren Hastings, first Governor-General of Bengal. Compiled from Original Papers, by the Rev. G. R. Gleig, M.A., 3 vols., 8vo. London: 1841.*

Warren Hastings sprang from an ancient and illustrious race. It has been affirmed that his pedigree can be traced back to the great Danish sea-king, whose sails were long the terror of both coasts of the British Channel, and who, after many fierce and doubtful struggles, yielded at last to the valour and genius of Alfred. But the undoubted splendour of the line of Hastings needs no illustration from fable. One branch of that line wore, in the fourteenth century, the coronet of Pembroke. From another branch sprang the renowned Chamberlain, the faithful adherent of the White Rose, whose fate has furnished so striking a theme both to poets and to historians. His family received from the Tudors the earldom of Huntingdon, which after long dispossession, was regained in our time by a series of events scarcely paralleled in romance.

The lords of the manor of Daylesford, in Worcestershire, claimed to be considered as the heads of this distinguished family. The manor stock, indeed, prospered less than some of the younger shoots. But the Daylesford family, though not ennobled, was wealthy and highly considered, till about two hundred years ago it was overwhelmed by the great ruin of the civil war. The Hastings of that time was a zealous cavalier. He raised money on his lands, sent his plate to the mint at Oxford, joined the royal army, and after spending half his property in the cause of King Charles, was glad to ransom himself by making over the most of the remaining half to Speaker Lenthall. The old seat at Daylesford still remained in the family; but it could no longer be kept up, and in the following generation it was sold to a merchant of London.

Before this transfer took place, the last Hastings of Daylesford had presented his second son to the rectory of the parish in which the ancient residence of the family stood. The living was of little value; and the situation of the poor clergyman, after the sale of the estate, was deplorable. He was constantly engaged in lawsuits about his tithes with the new lord of the manor, and was at length utterly ruined. His eldest son, Howard, a well-conducted young man, obtained a place in the Customs. The second son Pynaston, an idle, worthless boy, married before he was sixteen, lost his wife in two years, and died in the West Indies, leaving to the care of his unfortunate father a little orphan, destined to undergo strange and memorable vicissitudes of fortune.

Warren, the son of Pynaston, was born on the sixth of December, 1732. His mother died a few days later, and he was left dependent on his distressed grandfather. The child was early sent to the village school, where he learned his letters on the same bench with the sons of the peasantry; nor did anything in his garb or fare indicate that his life was to take a widely different course from that of the young rustic.

illustrious race. With whom he studied and played. But no cloud could overcast the back to the great Dawn of so much genius and so much ambition. The very ploughmen both coasts of the B. observed, and long remembered, how kindly little Warren took to his full struggles, yielding. The daily sight of the lands which his ancestors had possessed, the undoubted splendour which had passed into the hands of strangers, filled his young brain a fable. One branch with wild fancies and projects. He loved to hear stories of the wealth coronet of Pembroke greatness of his progenitors, of their splendid housekeeping, their amberlain, the fairy, and their valour. On one bright summer day the boy, then furnished so striking seven years old, lay on the bank of the rivulet which flows through the family received from the old domain of his house to join the Isis. There, as threescore and long dispossession, ten years later he told the tale, rose in his mind a scheme which, paralleled in romance through all the turns of his eventful career, was never abandoned. He in Westmoreland, claimed could recover the estate which had belonged to his fathers. He would ed family. The man Hastings of Daylesford. This purpose, formed in infancy and anger shoots. But to forty, grew stronger as his intellect expanded and as his fortune rose. healthy and highly ed pursued his plan with that calm but indomitable force of will which overwhelmed by was the most striking peculiarity of his character. When, under a at time was a zealous sun, he ruled fifty millions of Asiatics, his hopes, amidst all the s plate to the minarets of war, finance, and legislation, still pointed to Daylesford. And g half his property when his long public life, so singularly chequered with good and evil, himself by making with glory and obloquy, had at length closed for ever, it was to Dayles- the old seat at Dayford that he retired to die.

onger be kept up, When he was eight years old his uncle Howard determined to take ent of London. charge of him, and to give him a liberal education. The boy went up gs of Daylesford to London, and was sent to a school at Newington, where he was well n in which the ancient but ill fed. He always attributed the smallness of his stature to ttle value; and the hard and scanty fare of this seminary. At ten he was removed to he estate, was dep. Westminster School, then flourishing under the care of Dr. Nichols. at his tithes with Vinny Bourne, as his pupils affectionately called him, was one of the ruined. His eld. masters. Churchill, Colman, Lloyd, Cumberland, Cowper, were among d a place in the O. the students. With Cowper, Hastings formed a friendship which boy, married before the lapse of time nor a wide dissimilarity of opinions and pur- in the West Indies could wholly dissolve. It does not appear that they ever met orphan, destined after they had grown to manhood. But forty years later, when the voices of many great orators were crying for vengeance on the oppressor sixth of December of India, the shy and secluded poet could image to himself Hastings the left dependent Governor-General only as the Hastings with whom he had rowed on the sent to the villa Thames and played in the cloister, and refused to believe that so good- ph with the sons tempered a fellow could have done anything very wrong. His own life re indicate that he had been spent in praying, musing, and rhyming among the water-lilies f the young rustic of the Ouse. He had preserved in no common measure the innocence of

childhood. His spirit had indeed been severely tried, but not by the temptations which impelled him to any gross violation of the rules of social morality. He had never been attacked by combinatorial powerful and deadly enemies. He had never been compelled to choose between innocence and greatness, between crime and glory. Firmly as he held in theory the doctrine of human depravity, his passions were such that he was unable to conceive how far from the path of duty even kind and noble natures may be hurried by the rage of conflict and the lust of dominion.

Hastings had another associate at Westminster of whom we have occasion to make frequent mention, Elijah Impey. We know little about their school-days. But, we think, we may safely venture to guess that whenever Hastings wished to play any trick more than usually naughty he hired Impey, with a tart or a ball, to act as finisher of the worst part of the prank.

Warren was distinguished among his comrades as an excellent swimmer, boatman, and scholar. At fourteen he was first in the examination for the foundation. His name in gilded letters on the walls of the dormitory still attests his victory over many older competitors. He stayed two years longer at the school, and was looking forward to a studentship at Christ Church, when an event happened which changed the whole course of his life. Howard Hastings died, bequeathing his nephew to the care of a friend and distant relation named Chiswick. This gentleman, though he did not absolutely refuse the charge, was desirous to rid himself of it as soon as possible. Mr. Nichols made strong remonstrances against the cruelty of interrupting the studies of a youth who seemed likely to be one of the first scholars of the age. He even offered to bear the expense of sending his favourite pupil to Oxford. But Mr. Chiswick was inflexible. He thought the years which had already been wasted on hexameters and pentameters quite sufficient. He had it in his power to obtain for the lad a writership in the service of the East India Company. Whether the young adventurer, when once shipped off, made a fortune or died of a liver complaint, he equally ceased to be a burden to anybody. Warren was accordingly removed from Westminster School, and placed for a few months at a commercial academy to study arithmetic and bookkeeping. In January 1750, a few days after he had completed his seventeenth year, he sailed for Bengal, and arrived at his destination in the October following.

---

## CHAPTER II.

## FIRST DUTIES IN INDIA—1750—1764.

severely tried, but not a violation of the rule, checked by combination, been compelled to choose between crime and human depravity, his doubts, and laboured there during two years. Fort William was then far from the path of a commercial settlement. In the south of India the encroaching policy of Dupleix had transformed the servants of the English Company, against their will, into diplomatists and generals. The war of the succession was raging in the Carnatic; and the tide had been suddenly turned against the French by the genius of young Robert Clive. But in Bengal, the European settlers, at peace with the natives and with each other, were wholly occupied with ledgers and bills of lading.

After two years passed in keeping accounts at Calcutta, Hastings was sent up the country to Cossimbazar, a town which lies on the Hoogley, about a mile from Moorshedabad, and which then bore to Moorshedabad the relation, if we may compare small things with great, such as the city of London bears to Westminster. Moorshedabad was the abode of the prince who by an authority ostensibly derived from the Mogul, but really independent, ruled the three great provinces of Bengal, Orissa and Bahar. Moorshedabad were the Court, the harem and the public offices. Cossimbazar was a port and a place of trade, renowned for the quantity and distant relations of excellence of the silks which were sold in its marts, and constantly receiving and sending forth fleets of richly laden barges. At this important point the Company had established a small factory, subordinate to that of Fort William. Here, during several years, Hastings was employed in making bargains for stuffs with native brokers. While he was thus engaged, Surajah Dowlah succeeded to the government, and declared war against the English. The defenceless settlement of Cossimbazar, lying close to the tyrant's capital, was instantly seized. Hastings was sent a prisoner to Moorshedabad, but in consequence of humane intervention of the servants of the Dutch Company, he was treated with indulgence. Meanwhile the Nabob marched on to Calcutta; the governor and the commandant fled; the town and citadel were taken, and most of the English prisoners perished in the Black Hole. In these events originated the greatness of Warren Hastings. The fifth governor and his companions had taken refuge on the dreary bank of Fulda, near the mouth of the Hoogley. They were naturally desirous to obtain full information respecting the proceedings of the Nabob, and no person seemed so likely to furnish it as Hastings, who was a prisoner at large in the immediate neighbourhood of the Court. He

thus became a diplomatic agent and soon established a high character for ability and resolution. The treason, which at a later period fatal to Surajah Dowlah was already in progress, and Hastings was admitted to the deliberations of the conspirators. But the time for striking had not arrived. It was necessary to postpone the execution of the design ; and Hastings, who was now in extreme peril, fled to Fulda.

Soon after his arrival at Fulda, the expedition from Madras, commanded by Clive appeared in the Hoogley. Warren, young, intrepid, and excited probably by the example of the Commander of the Force, who, having like himself been a mercantile agent of the Company, had been turned by public calamities into a soldier, determined to serve in the ranks.

During the early operations of the war he carried a musket. But the quick eye of Clive soon perceived that the head of the young volunteer would be more useful than his arm. When, after the battle of Plassey, Meer Jaffier was proclaimed Nabob of Bengal, Hastings was appointed to reside at the Court of the new prince as agent for the company.

He remained at Moorshedabad till the year 1761, when he became the Member of Council, and was consequently forced to reside at Calcutta. This was during the interval between Clive's first and second administration, an interval which has left on the fame of the East India Company a stain not wholly effaced by many years of just and humane government. Mr. Vansittart, the Governor, was at the head of a narrow and anomalous empire. On one side was a band of English functionaries, daring, intelligent, eager to be rich. On the other side was a great native population, helpless, timid, accustomed to crouch under oppression. To keep the stronger race from preying on the weaker was an undertaking which taxed to the utmost the talents and energy of Clive. Vansittart, with fair intentions, was a feeble and inefficient ruler. The master caste, as was natural, broke loose from all restraint, and then was seen what we believe to be the most frightful of all spectacles, the strength of civilization without its mercy. To all other despotism there is a check, imperfect, indeed, and liable to gross abuse, but still sufficient to preserve society from the last extreme of misery. A time comes when the evils of submission are obviously greater than those of resistance, when fear itself begets a sort of courage, when a convulsive burst of popular rage and despair warns tyrants not to presume too far on the patience of mankind. But against misgovernment such as then afflicted Bengal it was impossible to struggle. The superior intelligence and energy of the dominant class made their power irresistible. A war of Bengalees against Englishmen was like a war of

published a high character against wolves, of men against demons. The only protection which at a later period the conquered could find was in the moderation, the clemency, and Hastings was enlarged policy of the conquerors. That protection, at a later period, they found. But at first English power came among them accompanied by English morality. There was an interval between the execution of the time at which they became our subjects and the time at which we began to reflect that we were bound to discharge towards them the duties of rulers. During that interval the business of a servant of the Commander of the Company was simply to wring out of the natives a hundred or two hundred thousand pounds as speedily as possible, that he might return determined to serve before his constitution had suffered from the heat, to marry a peer's daughter, to buy rotten boroughs in Cornwall, and to give balls in St. James's Square. Of the conduct of Hastings at this time little is known; but the little that is known, and the circumstance that little is known, must be considered as honourable to him. He could not protect the natives; all that he could do was to abstain from plundering and oppressing them, and this he appears to have done. It is certain that at this time he continued poor; and it is equally certain that by cruelty and dishonesty he might easily have become rich. It is certain that he was never charged with having borne a share in the worst abuses which then prevailed; and it is almost equally certain that, if he had borne a share in those abuses, the able and bitter enemies who afterwards persecuted him would not have failed to discover and to proclaim his guilt. The keen, severe, and even malevolent scrutiny to which his whole public life was subjected, a scrutiny unparalleled, as we believe, in the history of mankind, is in one respect advantageous to his reputation. It brought many lamentable blemishes to light, but it entitles him to be considered pure from every blemish which has not been brought to light.

The truth is, that the temptations to which so many English functionaries yielded in the time of Mr. Vansittart were not temptations addressed to the ruling passions of Warren Hastings. He was not squeamish in pecuniary transactions; but he was neither sordid nor rapacious. He was far too enlightened a man to look on a great empire merely as a buccaneer would look on a galleon. Had his heart been much worse than it was, his understanding would have preserved him from that extremity of baseness. He was an unscrupulous, perhaps an unprincipled statesman; but still he was a statesman, and not a freebooter.

## CHAPTER III.

## VISITS ENGLAND AND RETURNS TO INDIA.

In 1764 Hastings returned to England. He had realized only a moderate fortune; and that moderate fortune was soon reduced to nothing, partly by his praiseworthy liberality, and partly by his mismanagement. Towards his relations he appears to have acted very generously. The greater part of his savings he left in Bengal, hoping probably to obtain the high usury of India; but high usury and security generally go together, and Hastings lost both interest and principal.

He remained four years in England. Of his life at that time very little is known. But it has been asserted, and is highly probable, that liberal studies and the society of men of letters occupied a great part of his time. It is to be remembered to his honour that, in days when the languages of the East were regarded by other servants of the Company merely as the means of communicating with weavers and money-changers, his enlarged and accomplished mind sought in Asiatic learning for new forms of intellectual enjoyment, and for new views of government and society. Perhaps, like most persons who have paid much attention to departments of knowledge which lie out of the common track, he was inclined to overrate the value of his favourite studies. He conceived that the cultivation of Persian literature might with advantage be made a part of the liberal education of an English gentleman, and he drew up a plan with that view. It is said that the University of Oxford, in which Oriental learning had never, since the revival of letters, been wholly neglected, was to be the seat of the institution which he contemplated. An endowment was expected from the munificence of the Company; and professors thoroughly competent to interpret Hafiz and Ferdusi were to be engaged in the East. Hastings called on Johnson, with the hope, as it should seem, of interesting this project a man who enjoyed the highest literary reputation, and who was particularly connected with Oxford. The interview appears to have left on Johnson's mind a most favourable impression of the talents and attainments of his visitor. Long after, when Hastings was ruling the immense population of British India, the old philosopher wrote to him and referred in the most courtly terms, though with great dignity, to their short but agreeable intercourse.

Hastings soon began to look again towards India. He had little to attach him to England, and his pecuniary embarrassments were great. He solicited his old masters the Directors for employment. The

TO INDIA. ded to his request, with high compliments both to his abilities to his integrity, and appointed him a Member of Council at Madras. could be unjust not to mention that, although forced to borrow had realized only a day for his outfit, he did not withdraw any portion of the sum which ne was soon reduced had appropriated to the relief of his distressed relations. In the and partly by his aid of 1769 he embarked on board of the *Duke of Grafton*, and com- pears to have acted and a voyage distinguished by incidents which might furnish matter he left in Bengal, a novel. ut high usury and among the passengers in the *Duke of Grafton* was a German of the lost both interest as of Imhoff. He called himself a Baron; but he was in distressed umstances, and was going out to Madras as a portrait-painter, in the life at that time ve of picking up some of the pagodas which were then lightly got and s highly probable, tightly spent by the English in India. The Baron was accompanied occupied a great part his wife, a native, we have somewhere read, of Archangel. This that, in days when a woman, who, born under the Arctic circle, was destined to play vants of the Compa part of a Queen under the tropic of Cancer, had an agreeable person, weavers and mon cultivated mind, and manners in the highest degree engaging. She ight in Asiatic learn ed her husband heartily, and, as the story which we have to tell new views of gove efficiently proves, not without reason. She was interested by the who have paid m conversation and flattered by the attentions of Hastings. The situation e out of the comm indeed, perilous. No place is so propitious to the formation of favourite studies. her close friendships or of deadly enmities as an Indianman. There are might with adv very few people who do not find a voyage which lasts several English gentlemen insupportably dull. Anything is welcome which may break l that the Univers at long monotony—a sail, a shark, an albatross, a man overboard. since the revival lost passengers find some resource in eating twice as many meals as on st of the institut and. But the great devices for killing the time are quarrelling and expected from iring. The facilities for both these exciting pursuits are great. The oughly competent mates of the ship are thrown together far more than in any country- the East. Hastin at or boarding-house. None can escape from the rest except by m, of interesting prisoning himself in a cell in which he can hardly turn. All food, all rary reputation, an cise, is taken in company. Ceremony is to a great extent banished. interview appears a every day in the power of a mischievous person to inflict ession of the talea merable annoyances. It is every day in the power of an amiable stings was ruling on to confer little services. It not seldom happens that serious pher wrote to him dress and danger call forth, in genuine beauty and deformity, heroic a great dignity, times and abject vices which, in the ordinary intercourse of good society, might remain during many years unknown even to intimate associates. Under such circumstances met Warren Hastings and the He had little Baroness Imhoff, two persons whose accomplishments would have sments were gre attracted notice in any court of Europe. The gentleman had no employment. The

domestic ties. The lady was tied to a husband for whom she regard, and who had no regard for his own honour. An attack sprang up, which was soon strengthened by events such as could have occurred on land. Hastings fell ill. The Baroness nursed with womanly tenderness, gave him his medicines with her own hand and even sat up in his cabin while he slept. Long before the *Grafton* reached Madras Hastings was in love. But his love was of the most characteristic description. Like his hatred, like his ambition, all his passions, it was strong, but not impetuous. It was calm, earnest, patient of delay, unconquerable by time. Imhoff was introduced into council by his wife and his wife's lover. It was arranged that the Baroness should institute a suit for a divorce in the courts of France, and that the Baron should afford every facility to the proceeding, and during the years which might elapse before the sentence should be pronounced they should continue to live together. It was also agreed that Hastings should bestow some very substantial marks of gratitude on his complaisant husband, and should, when the marriage was dissolved, make the lady his wife, and adopt the children whom she had already borne to Imhoff.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### APPOINTED GOVERNOR OF BENGAL.

At Madras, Hastings found the trade of the Company in a very disorganised state. His own tastes would have led him rather to politics than to commercial pursuits; but he knew that the favour of the employers depended chiefly on their dividends, and that their dividends depended chiefly on the investment. He, therefore, with great judgment, determined to apply his vigorous mind for a time to this department of business, which had been much neglected, since the servants of the Company had ceased to be clerks, and had become warriors and negotiators.

In a very few months he effected an important reform. The Directors notified to him their high approbation, and were so much pleased with his conduct that they determined to place him at the head of the Government of Bengal. Early in 1772 he quitted Fort St. George for his new post. The Imhoffs, who were still man and wife, accompanied him, and lived at Calcutta on the same plan which they had already followed during more than two years.

When Hastings took his seat at the head of the Council Board, Be-

band for whom she still governed according to the system which Clive had devised, a  
 yn honour. An attack which was, perhaps, skilfully contrived for the purpose of  
 events such as could irritating and concealing a great revolution, but which, when that  
 The Baroness nurse, resolution was complete and irrevocable, could produce nothing but  
 medicines with her own convenience. There were two governments, the real and the  
 t. Long before the enable. The supreme power belonged to the Company, and was in  
 ve. But his love was th the most despotic power that can be conceived. The only restraint  
 atred, like his ambition the English masters of the country was that which their own justice  
 tuous. It was calm, humanity imposed on them. There was no constitutional check on  
 time. Imhoff was air will, and resistance to them was utterly hopeless.  
 It was arranged th But though thus absolute in reality, the English had not yet assumed  
 in the courts of France style of sovereignty. They held their territories as vassals of the  
 o the proceeding, and one of Delhi; they raised their revenues as collectors appointed by  
 the sentence should be imperial commission; their public seal was inscribed with the  
 r. It was also agreed imperial titles; and their mint struck only the imperial coin.  
 l marks of gratitude There was still a Nabob of Bengal, who stood to the English rulers of  
 ne marriage was dissolved country in the same relation in which Augustulus stood to Odoacer,  
 ren whom she had al the last Merovingians to Charles Martel and Pepin. He lived at  
 orshedabad, surrounded by princely magnificence. He was  
 roached with outward marks of reverence, and his name was used in  
 the instruments. But in the government of the country he had  
 a real share than the youngest writer or cadet in the Company's  
 vice.

BENGAL.

The English Council which represented the Company at Calcutta was  
 Company in a very different plan from that which has since been  
 l him rather to poliopted. At present the Governor is, as to all executive measures,  
 that the favour of late. He can declare war, conclude peace, appoint public  
 and that their dividersionaries or remove them, in opposition to the unanimous sense of  
 before, with great joy who sit with him in Council. They are, indeed, entitled to know  
 or a time to this day that is done, to discuss all that is done, to advise, to remonstrate, to  
 ted, since the servants protests to England. But it is with the Governor that the  
 ad become warriors prime power resides, and on him that the whole responsibility rests.  
 his system, which was introduced by Mr. Pitt and Mr. Dundas, in spite  
 important reform. the strenuous opposition of Mr. Burke, we conceive to be on the whole  
 tion, and were so best that was ever devised for the government of a country where  
 to place him at the materials can be found for a representative constitution. In the time  
 quitted Fort St. George Hastings the Governor had only one vote in Council, and, in case of  
 a man and wife, equal division, a casting vote. It therefore happened not unfre-  
 ne plan which they quently that he was overruled on the gravest questions; and it was  
 cessible that he might be wholly excluded, for years together, from the  
 e Council Board, Bengal direction of public affairs.

The English functionaries at Fort William had as yet paid little attention to the internal government of Bengal. The only branch of politics about which they much busied themselves was negotiation with the native princes. The police, the administration of justice, the details of the collection of revenue, were almost entirely neglected. One may remark that the phraseology of the Company's servants still bears the traces of this state of things. To this day they always use the word "political" as synonymous with "diplomatic." We could name a gentleman, still living, who was described by the highest authorities as an invaluable public servant, eminently fit to be at the head of the internal administration of a whole presidency, but unfortunately ignorant of all political business.

The internal government of Bengal the English rulers delegated to a great native minister, who was stationed at Moorshedabad. He managed the military affairs, and, with the exception of what pertains to mere ceremonial, all foreign affairs were withdrawn from his control; but the other departments of the administration were entirely confided to him. His own stipend amounted to nearly a hundred thousand pounds sterling a year. The personal allowance of the Nabob, amounting to more than three hundred thousand pounds a year, passed through the minister's hands, and was, to a great extent, at his disposal. The collection of the revenue, the administration of justice, the maintenance of order, were left to this high functionary; and for the exercise of his immense power he was responsible to none but the British masters of the country.

A situation so important, lucrative, and splendid was naturally the object of ambition to the ablest and most powerful natives. Clive found it difficult to decide between conflicting pretensions. Two candidates stood out prominently from the crowd, each of them the representative of a race and of a religion.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### BENGALÉE CHARACTER DESCRIBED.

One of these was Mahommed Reza Khan, a Mussulman of Persian extraction, able, active, religious after the fashion of his people, highly esteemed by them. In England he might, perhaps, have been regarded as a corrupt and greedy politician. But, tried by the low standard of Indian morality, he might be considered as a man of integrity and honour.

had as yet paid little attention to the melancholy event, been inseparably associated with that of Warren Hastings, the Maharajah Nuncomar. This man had played an important part in all the revolutions which, since the time of Surajah Daulah, had taken place in Bengal. To the consideration which in that country belongs to high and pure caste, he added the weight which is derived from wealth, talents and experience. Of his moral character it is difficult to give a notion to those who are acquainted with human nature only as it appears in our island. What the Italian is to the Englishman, what the Hindoo is to the Italian, what the Bengalee is to the Hindoos, that was Nuncomar to other Bengalees. The physical organization of the Bengalee is feeble even to effeminacy. He lives in a constant vapour bath. His pursuits are sedentary, his limbs delicate, his movements languid. During many ages he has been trampled upon by men of bolder and more hardy breeds. Courage, independence, activity, are qualities to which his constitution and his situation are usually unfavourable. His mind bears a singular analogy to his body. Weak even to helplessness for purposes of manly resistance; but suppleness and its tact move the children of sterner climates to emulation not unmingled with contempt. All those arts which are the basis of social defence of the weak are more familiar to this subtle race than to the Ionian of the time of Juvenal, or to the Jew of the dark ages. The horns are to the buffalo, what the paw is to the tiger, what the sting is to the bee, what beauty, according to the old Greek song, is to woman, deceit is to the Bengalee. Large promises, smooth excuses, elaborate tissues of circumstantial falsehood, chicanery, perjury, flattery are the weapons, offensive and defensive, of the people of the Ganges. Two canmow Ganges. All those millions do not furnish one sepoy to the British masters of the Company. But as usurers, as money-changers, as sharp dealers, no class of human beings can bear a comparison with them. With all his softness, the Bengalee is by no means placable in his animities or prone to pity. The pertinacity with which he adheres to his purposes yields only to the immediate pressure of fear. Nor does he lack a certain kind of courage which is often wanting to his masters. To inevitable evils he is sometimes found to oppose a passive fortitude, such as the Stoics attributed to their ideal sage. A European warrior who rushes on a battery of cannon with a loud hurrah will sometimes shrink under the surgeon's knife, and fall into an agony of despair at the sentence of death. But the Bengalee, who would see his country overrun, his house laid in ashes, his children murdered or dishonoured, without having the spirit to strike one blow, has yet been known to

endure torture with the firmness of Mucius, and to mount the scaffold with the steady step and even pulse of Algernon Sidney.

In Nuncomar the national character was strongly and with effect personified. The Company's servants had repeatedly detected him in the most criminal intrigues. On one occasion he brought a charge against another Hindoo, and tried to substantiate it by producing forged documents. On another occasion it was discovered that he, professing the strongest attachment to the English, he was engaged in several conspiracies against them, and in particular that he was the medium of a correspondence between the Court of Delhi and the authorities in the Carnatic. For these and similar practices he had been long detained in confinement. But his talents and influence not only procured his liberation, but had obtained for him a high degree of consideration, even among the British rulers of his country.

Clive was extremely unwilling to place a Mussulman at the head of the administration of Bengal. On the other hand, he could not refuse himself to confer immense power on a man to whom every species of villainy had repeatedly been brought home. Therefore, though he was a Nabob, over whom Nuncomar had by intrigue acquired great influence, he begged that the artful Hindoo might be entrusted with the government. Clive, after some hesitation, decided honestly and wisely in favour of Mahommed Reza Khan. When Hastings became Governor, Mahommed Reza Khan had held power seven years. An infant son of Meer Jaffer was now Nabob; and the guardianship of the young prince's person had been confided to the minister.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE DOUBLE GOVERNMENT DISSOLVED.

Nuncomar, stimulated at once by cupidity and malice, had been constantly attempting to hurt the reputation of his successful rival. This was not difficult. The revenues of Bengal, under the administration established by Clive, did not yield such a surplus as had been anticipated by the Company; for at that time the most absurd notions were entertained in England respecting the wealth of India. Palaces of porphyry, hung with the richest brocade, heaps of pearls and diamonds, vaults from which pagodas and gold mohurs were measured out by the bushel, filled the imagination even of men of business. Nobody seemed to be aware of what nevertheless was most undoubtedly the truth. India was a poorer country than countries which in Europe are reckoned

and to mount the ~~same~~ than Ireland, for example, or than Portugal. It was confidently  
 Vernon Sidney. ~~was~~ by Lords of the Treasury and members for the City, that  
 strongly and with exal would not only defray its own charges, but would afford an  
 had repeatedly detected ~~and~~ dividend to the proprietors of India stock and large relief to  
 the occasion he brought English finances. These absurd expectations were disappointed;  
 to substantiate it by pro the Directors, naturally enough, chose to attribute the disappoint-  
 was discovered that it rather to the mismanagement of Mahommed Reza Khan than to  
 English, he was enga own ignorance of the country entrusted to their care. They were  
 particular that he warned in their error by the agents of Nuncomar; for Nuncomar had  
 court of Delhi and the late even in Leadenhall Street. Soon after Hastings reached Cal-  
 and similar practices he he received a letter addressed by the Court of Directors, not to  
 talents and influence Council generally, but to himself in particular. He was directed to  
 obtained for him a cer Mahommed Reza Khan, to arrest him together with all his  
 British rulers of his country and all his partisans, and to institute a strict inquiry into the  
 Mussulman at the head administration of the province. It was added that the Governor  
 hand, he could not but do well to avail himself of the assistance of Nuncomar in the  
 man to whom every sor investigation. The vices of Nuncomar were acknowledged. But even  
 ne. Therefore, though his vices, it was said, much advantage might at such a conjuncture  
 true acquired great influence; and, though he could not safely be trusted, it might still be  
 trusted with the government to encourage him by hopes of reward.  
 y and wisely in favour Governor bore no good-will to Nuncomar. Many years before  
 came Governor, Mahom had known each other at Moorshedabad; and then a quarrel had  
 infant son of Meer Jaf between them which all the authority of their superiors could  
 the young prince's person ly compose. Widely as they differed in most points, they  
 abled each other in this, that both were men of unforgiving natures.  
 Mahommed Reza Khan, on the other hand, Hastings had no feelings  
 ability. Nevertheless he proceeded to execute the instructions of  
 Company with an alacrity which he never showed except when  
 tractions were in perfect conformity with his own views. He had,  
 ly as we think, determined to get rid of the system of double  
 DISSOLVED.  
 ty and malice, had to ment in Bengal. The orders of the Directors furnished him with  
 of his successful r means of effecting his purpose, and dispensed him from the necessity  
 ngal, under the adm discussing the matter with his Council. He took his measures with  
 a surplus as had basal vigour and dexterity. At midnight the palace of Mahommed  
 the most absurd notu Khan at Moorshedabad was surrounded by a battalion of sepoys.  
 lth of India. Palace minister was roused from his slumbers and informed that he was a  
 of pearls and diamo lower. With the Mussulman gravity, he bent his head and submitted  
 re measured out by self to the will of God. He fell not alone. A chief named Schitab  
 sinness. Nobody seen had been entrusted with the government of Bahar. His valour  
 oubtedly the truth, to his attachment to the English had more than once been signally  
 in Europe are reckon ed. On that memorable day on which the people of Patna saw

from their walls the whole army of the Mogul scattered by the band of Captain Knox, the voice of the British conquerors and the palm of gallantry to the brave Asiatic. "I never," said Knox, when he introduced Schitab Roy, covered with blood and dust, to the British functionaries assembled in the factory, "I never saw a native in such a state before." Schitab Roy was involved in the ruin of Mahommed Khan, was removed from office, and was placed under arrest. The members of the Council received no intimation of these measures until the prisoners were on their road to Calcutta.

The inquiry into the conduct of the minister was postponed on different pretences. He was detained in an easy confinement for many months. In the meantime the great revolution which he had planned was carried into effect. The office of minister was abolished. The internal administration was transferred to the directors of the Company. A system—a very imperfect system, it is true, in civil and criminal justice, under English superintendence, was established. The Nabob was no longer to have even an ostensible share in the government; but he was still to receive a considerable allowance, and to be surrounded with the state of sovereignty. As he was an infant, it was necessary to provide guardians for his personal property. His person was entrusted to a lady of his father's household known by the name of Munny Begum. The office of treasurer of the household was bestowed on a son of Nuncomar, named Goordas. Goordas's services were wanted; yet he could not safely be trusted with power, and Hastings thought it a masterstroke of policy to reward him with a title and unprincipled parent by promoting the inoffensive child.

The revolution completed, the double government dissolved, the Company installed in the full sovereignty of Bengal, Hastings had no motive to treat the late ministers with rigour. Their trial had been deferred on various pleas till the new organization was complete. They were then brought before a committee, over which the Governor presided. Schitab Roy was speedily acquitted with honour. A formal apology was made to him for the restraint to which he had been subjected. The Eastern marks of respect were bestowed on him. He was clothed in a robe of state, presented with jewels and with a richly harnessed elephant, and sent back to his government at Patna. But his health had suffered from confinement; his high spirit had been crushed and wounded; and soon after his liberation he died of a broken heart.

The innocence of Mahommed Reza Khan was not so clearly established. But the Governor was not disposed to deal harshly. At a long hearing, in which Nuncomar appeared as the accuser, and dis-

Mogul scattered by the British conquerors said "I never," said Knowlton, blood and dust, to the I never saw a native the ruin of Mahommah placed under arrest of these measures.

minister was postponed to an easy confinement of revolution which the office of minister transferred to the perfect system, it is the superintendence, was even an ostensible to receive a considerable state of sovereignty.

guardians for his person, lady of his father's had the office of treasurer of war, named Goordas. He was not safely be trusted of policy to reward the inoffensive child. Government dissolved, Bengal, Hastings had

Their trial had been complete. They the Governor presided in honour. A formal apology had been subjected to him. He was clothed with a richly harnessed Patna. But his heart had been crushed of a broken heart. He was not so clearly exposed to deal harshly. After the accuser, and displayed

the art and inveterate rancour which distinguished him, Hastings counselled that the charge had not been made out, and ordered the minister to be set at liberty.

ancomar had purposed to destroy the Mussulman administration, to rise on its ruin. Both his malevolence and his cupidity had been disappointed. Hastings had made him a tool, had used him for the purpose of accomplishing the transfer of the government from Moorsabad to Calcutta, from native to European hands. The rival, the man so long envied, so implacably persecuted, had been dismissed. The situation so long and ardently desired had been abolished. It was natural that the Governor should be from that time an object of most intense hatred to the vindictive Brahmin. As yet, however, it was necessary to suppress such feelings. The time was coming when long animosity was to end in a desperate and deadly struggle.

## CHAPTER VII.

### AN EMPTY TREASURY.

the meantime Hastings was compelled to turn his attention to his affairs. The object of his diplomacy was at this time simply to save money. The finances of his government were in an embarrassed state, and this embarrassment he was determined to relieve by some means, fair or foul. The principle which directed all his dealings with his neighbours is fully expressed by the old motto of one of the great predatory families of Teviotdale, "Thou shalt want ere I want." He was to have laid it down, as a fundamental proposition which could not be disputed, that, when he had not as many lacs of rupees as the service required, he was to take them from anybody who had. The thing, indeed, is to be said in excuse for him. The pressure put upon him by his employers at home was such as only the highest could have withstood, such as left him no choice except to do great wrongs, or to resign his high post, and with that post all hopes of fortune and distinction. The Directors, it is true, never joined or applauded any crime. Far from it. Whoever examines his letters written at that time will find there many just and humane sentiments, many excellent precepts—in short, an admirable code of ethical ethics. But every exhortation is modified or nullified by a demand for money. "Govern leniently, and send more money; do the strict justice and moderation towards neighbouring powers, and send more money;" this is, in truth, the sum of almost all the instructions.

tions that Hastings ever received from home. Now these instructions, being interpreted, mean simply, "Be the father and the oppressor of the people; be just and unjust, moderate and rapacious." The Viceroy and his Council dealt with India as the Church, in the good old times, dealt with heretics. They delivered the victim over to the executioners, and made an earnest request that all possible tenderness might be shown. Warren Hastings means accuse or suspect those who framed these despatches of Viceroy. It is probable that, writing fifteen thousand miles from the place where their orders were to be carried into effect, they never perceived the inconsistency of which they were guilty. But the inconsistency was once manifest to their vicegerent at Calcutta, who, with an empty treasury, with an unpaid army, with his own salary often in doubt, with deficient crops, with government tenants daily running away, when called upon to remit home another half million without fail. Hastings saw that it was absolutely necessary for him to disregard either the moral discourses or the pecuniary requisitions of his employers. When forced to disobey them in something, he had to consider what kind of disobedience they would most readily pardon; and he correctly judged that the safest course would be to neglect the sermons and to save his rupees.

A mind so fertile as his, and so little restrained by conventional scruples, speedily discovered several modes of relieving the financial embarrassments of the government. The allowance of the Nizam of Bengal was reduced at a stroke from three hundred and twenty thousand pounds a year to half that sum. The Company had bound itself to pay near three hundred thousand pounds a year to the Great Mogul as a mark of homage for the provinces which he had entrusted to their care; and they had ceded to him the districts of Corah and Allahabad. On the plea that the Mogul was not really independent, but was a puppet in the hands of others, Hastings determined to retract these cessions. He accordingly declared that the English would pay no more tribute, and sent troops to occupy Allahabad and Corah. The situation of these places was such that there would be little advantage and great expense in retaining them. Hastings, who wanted power and not territory, determined to sell them. A purchaser was long wanting. The rich province of Oude had, in the general dissolution of the Mogul Empire, fallen to the share of the great Mussulman house to which it is still governed. About twenty years ago, this house, by the permission of the British Government, assumed the royal title; but at the time of Warren Hastings such an assumption would have been considered by the Mahomedans of India as a monstrous impiety.

Now these instructions of Oude, though he held the power, did not venture to use the  
 er and the oppressor sovereignty. To the appellation of Nabob or Viceroy, he added  
 rapacious." The Vizier of the monarchy of Hindostan, just as in the last century  
 old times, dealt with the electors of Saxony and Brandenburg, though independent of the  
 executioners, and often in arms against him, were proud to style themselves  
 to be shown. Weirand Chamberlain and Grand Marshal. Sujah Dowlah, then  
 despatches of the Vizier, was on excellent terms with the English. He had a  
 es from the place treasure. Allahabad and Corah were so situated that they might  
 ever perceived the use to him, and could be of none to the Company. The buyer  
 the inconsistency seller soon came to an understanding; and the provinces which had  
 who, with an torn from the Mogul were made over to the government of Oude  
 salary often in bout half a million sterling.

ily running away there was another matter still more important to be settled by  
 without fail. Hyzior and the Governor. The fate of a brave people was to be  
 to disregard either. It was decided in a manner which has left a lasting stain on  
 his employers. ame of Hastings and of England.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### COMPACT AGAINST THE ROHILLAS.

ained by com relieving the fine people of Central Asia had always been to the inhabitants of India  
 ance of the Nab the warriors of the German forests were to the subjects of the  
 d and twenty theying monarchy of Rome. The dark, slender, and timid Hindoo  
 had bound itself ank from a conflict with the strong muscle and resolute spirit of the  
 the Great Mo race which dwelt beyond the passes. There is reason to believe that, at  
 had entrusted to eriod anterior to the dawn of regular history, the people who spoke  
 Corah and Alla rich and flexible Sanscrit came from regions lying far beyond the  
 ndent, but me phasis and the Hytaspes, and imposed their yoke on the children of  
 to retract these soil. It is certain that during the last ten centuries a succession of  
 nglish would pa aders descended from the west on Hindostan; nor was the course of  
 ad and Corah. uest ever turned back towards the setting sun till that memorable  
 l be little adva paiga in which the Cross of Saint George was planted on the walls  
 who wanted n Ghizni.

purchaser wa The Emperors of Hindostan themselves came from the other side of  
 general dissolute great mountain ridge; and it had always been their practice to  
 Mussulman hou ruit their army from the hardy and valiant race from which their  
 , this house, by n illustrious house sprang. Among the military adventurers who  
 royal title; here allured to the Mogul standards from the neighbourhood of Cabul  
 n would have d Camlahar were conspicuous several gallant bands, known by the  
 trous impiety. ame of the Rohillas. Their services had been rewarded with large

tracts of land, fiefs of the spear, if we may use an expression from an analogous state of things, in that fertile plain through which Ramgunga flows from the snowy heights of Kumaon to join the Ganges. In the general confusion which followed the death of Aurangzeb, the Rohilla warlike colony became virtually independent. The Rohillas distinguished from the other inhabitants of India by a peculiar complexion. They were more honourably distinguished by their valorous war and by skill in the arts of peace. While anarchy reigned from Lahore to Cape Comorin, their little territory enjoyed the blessed repose under the guardianship of valour. Agriculture and manufactures flourished among them; nor were they negligent of rhetoric and arms. Many persons now living have heard aged men talk with pride of the golden days when the Afghan princes ruled in that district of Rohilcund.

Sujah Dowlah had set his heart on adding this rich district to his principality. Right, or show of right, he had absolutely none. His power was in no respect better founded than that of Catherine to Poland, or of the Bonaparte family to Spain. The Rohillas held their country exactly the same title by which he held his, and had governed their country far better than his had ever been governed. Nor were they a people whom it was perfectly safe to attack. Their land was an open plain, destitute of natural defences; but their veins were enriched with the high blood of Afghanistan. As soldiers, they had not the spirit which is seldom found except in company with strict discipline. Their impetuous valour had been proved on many fields of battle. It was said that their chiefs, when united by common peril, could muster eighty thousand men into the field. Sujah Dowlah had him often tried them in fight, and wisely shrank from a conflict with them. There was no India army, and only one, against which even those proud tribes could not stand. It had been abundantly proved that the British were at tenfold odds, nor the martial ardour of the boldest Asiatic could avail aught against English science and resolution. It was impossible to induce the Governor of Bengal to let out to hire the mighty energies of the Imperial people, the skill against which the chiefs of Hindostan were helpless as infants, the discipline which was so often triumphed over the frantic struggles of fanaticism and the unconquerable British courage which is never so sedate and firm as towards the close of a doubtful and murderous day?

This was what the Nabob Vizier asked, and what Hastings offered. A bargain was soon struck. Each of the negotiators had what the other wanted. Hastings was in need of funds to carry on the

may use an express of Bengal and to send remittances to London, and Sujah Dowlah fertile plain through ample revenue. Sujah Dowlah was bent on subjugating the of Kumaon to join the, and Hastings had at his disposal the only force by which the the death of Aurang could be subjugated. It was agreed that an English army ent. The Rohillas be lent to the Nabob Vizier, and that for the loan he should pay of India by a pecundred thousand pounds sterling, besides defraying all the charge distinguished by troops while employed in his service.

While anarchy really cannot see," says Mr. Gleig, "upon what grounds, either tory enjoyed the btical or moral justice, this proposition deserves to be stigmatized Agriculture and moun." If we understand the meaning of words, it is infamous ligent of rhetoric admit a wicked action for hire, and it is wicked to engage in war ged men talk wit provocation. In this particular war scarcely one aggravating rinces ruled in the stance was wanting. The object of the Rohilla war was this—to e a large population, who had never done us the least harm, of a g this rich district to government, and to place them, against their will, under an d absolutely none. ply had one. Nay, even this is not all. England now descended of Catherine to Poland ow the level even of those petty German princes who, about the Rohillas held their co ime, sold us troops to fight the Americans. The hussar-mongers his, and had govern se and Anspach had at least the assurance that the expeditions governed. Nor wer ich their soldiers were to be employed would be conducted in k. Their land was in nity with the humane rules of civilized warfare. Was the but their veins wer a war likely to be so conducted? Did the Governor stipulate e, they had not the s should be so conducted? He well knew what Indian warfare y with strict discipl He well knew that the power which he covenanted to put into on many fields of ba Dowlah's hands would, in all probability, be atrociously abused; common peril, cou e required no guarantee, no promise, that it should not be so h Dowlah had him l. He did not even reserve to himself the right of withdrawing ct with them. Ther l in case of abuse, however gross. We are almost ashamed to e even those proud C Major Scott's plea, that Hastings was justified in letting out andantly proved that h troops to slaughter the Rohillas, because the Rohillas were not the boldest Asiatic lian race, but a colony from a distant country. What were the e and resolution. sh themselves? Was it for them to proclaim a crusade for the o let out to hire the sion of all intruders from the countries watered by the Ganges? ill against which th lie in their mouths to contend that a foreign settler who estab- e, the discipline wh an empire in India is a *caput lupinum*? What would they have s of fanaticism and if any other Power had, on such a ground, attacked Madras or e ver so sedate and ata without the slightest provocation? Such a defence was e rous day? ing to make the infamy of the transaction complete. The nd what Hastings ity of the crime and the hypocrisy of the apology are worthy of e negotiators had other.

ds to carry on the

## CHAPTER IX.

## DEVASTATION OF ROHILCUND.

One of the three brigades of which the Bengal army consisted, under Colonel Champion, to join Sujah Dowlah's force. The Rohillas expostulated, entreated, offered a large ransom, but he refused. They then resolved to defend themselves to the last. A bloody battle was fought. "The enemy," says Colonel Champion, "gave us a good share of military knowledge; and it is impossible to find more obstinate firmness of resolution than they displayed." The dastardly sovereign of Oude fled from the field. The English, unsupported; but their fire and their charge were irresistible. Not, however, till the most distinguished chiefs had fallen. One died bravely at the head of their troops, that the Rohilla ranks gave ground. Then the Nabob Vizier and his rabble made their appearance. He hastened to plunder the camp of the valiant enemies, whom they never dared to look in the face. The soldiers of the Company, in an exact discipline, kept unbroken order while the tent was pillaged by these worthless allies. But many voices were heard to exclaim, "We have had all the fighting, and those rogues are the only ones who get all the profit."

Then the horrors of Indian war were let loose on the fair valleys and cities of Rohilcund. The whole country was in a blaze. More than a hundred thousand people fled from their homes to pestilential jungles, preferring famine and fever and the haunts of tigers to the tyranny of the Nabob. To him to whom an English and a Christian Government had, for a long time, paid tribute, sold their substance, and their blood, and the honour of their wives and daughters. Colonel Champion remonstrated with the Nabob Vizier, and sent strong representations to Fort William; but the Governor had made no conditions as to the mode in which the war was to be carried on. He had troubled himself about nothing but his own interests; and, though he might disapprove of Sujah Dowlah's barbarity, he did not think himself entitled to interfere, except by offering advice. This delicacy excites the admiration of the biographer. "Mr. Hastings," he says, "could not himself dictate to the Nabob to permit the commander of the Company's troops to dictate how the war was to be carried on." No, to be sure. Mr. Hastings had only to lay down by main force the brave struggles of innocent men fighting for their liberty. Their military resistance crushed, his duties ended, he had then only to fold his arms and look on while their villages

IX.

ROHILCUND.

the Bengal army ~~corously~~ abused? But we beg pardon of our readers for arguing a Sujah Dowlah's ~~case~~ clear.

a large ransom, but hasten to the end of this sad and disgraceful story. The war to the last. A bold. The finest population in India was subjected to a greedy, Champion, "gave ~~edly~~, cruel tyrant. Commerce and agriculture languished. The is impossible to ~~derovine~~ which had tempted the cupidity of Sujah Dowlah became than they displayed ~~ost~~ miserable part even of his miserable dominions. Yet is the field. The Englished nation not extinct. At long intervals gleams of its ancient rage were irresistible. ~~have~~ flashed forth; and even at this day valour and self-respect d chiefs had fallen, chivalrous feeling rare among Asiatics, and a bitter remembrance e Rohilla ranks ~~gave~~ great crime of England, distinguish that noble Afghan race. To made their appearance ~~day~~ they are regarded as the best of all sepoys at the cold steel; t enemies, whom ~~the~~ was very recently remarked by one who had enjoyed great oppor- s of the Company, ~~ies~~ of observation that the only natives of India to whom the word der while the ~~tent~~ ~~tleman~~" can with perfect propriety be applied are to be found many voices were ~~beg~~ the Rohillas.

those rogues are ~~that~~ ever we may think of the morality of Hastings, it cannot be ed that the financial results of his policy did honour to his talents. ose on the fair valle ~~ess~~ than two years after he assumed the government he had, in a blaze. More ~~out~~ imposing any additional burdens on the people subject to his s to pestilential ~~urity~~, added about four hundred and fifty thousand pounds to the tigers to the tyra ~~nal~~ income of the Company, besides procuring about a million in rnement had, for su ~~ly~~ money. He had also relieved the finances of Bengal from and the honour ~~itary~~ expenditure, amounting to near a quarter of a million a year, nstrated with the ~~t~~ had thrown that charge on the Nabob of Oude. There can be no ort William; ~~abt~~ that this was a result which, if it had been obtained by honest e in which the w ~~ans~~, would have entitled him to the warmest gratitude of his country, ut nothing but his ~~l~~ which, by whatever means obtained, proved that he possessed great Sujah Dowlah's w ~~ents~~ for administration.

to interfere, exce ~~In~~ the meantime Parliament had been engaged in long and grave ation of the biogr ~~ussions~~ on Asiatic affairs. The ministry of Lord North, in the tate to the Nabob ~~ision~~ of 1773, introduced a measure which made a considerable change to dictate how the ~~the~~ constitution of the Indian Government. This law, known by the tings had only t ~~ame~~ of the Regulating Act, provided that the presidency of Bengal cent men fighting ~~ould~~ exercise a control over the other possessions of the Company; his duties ended, ~~at~~ the chief of that presidency should be styled Governor-General; ile their villages ~~at~~ he should be assisted by four Councillors; and that a Supreme

Court of Judicature, consisting of a chief justice and judges, should be established at Calcutta. This Court independent of the Governor-General and Council, and with a civil and criminal jurisdiction of immense and, at times, of undefined extent.

The Governor-General and Councillors were named in 1773, and were to hold their situations for five years. Hastings was the first Governor-General. One of the four new Councillors, an experienced servant of the Company, was then in India—three, General Clavering, Mr. Monson, and Mr. Francis, were from England.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### PHILIP FRANCIS AND THE "LETTERS OF JUNIUS."

The ablest of the new Councillors was, beyond all doubt, Francis. His acknowledged compositions prove that he possessed considerable eloquence and information. Several years of public offices had formed him to habits of business. His friends never denied that he had a fearless and manly spirit; and we are afraid, must acknowledge that his estimate of himself was extravagantly high, that his temper was irritable, that he was often rude and petulant, and that his hatred was of intense nature and long duration.

It is scarcely possible to mention this eminent man without for a moment to the question which his name at once suggests to the mind. Was he the author of the Letters of Junius? The general belief is that he was. The evidence is, we think, such as would justify a verdict in a civil, nay, in a criminal proceeding. The handwriting of Junius is the very peculiar handwriting of Francis, slightly altered. As to the position, pursuits, and connections of Junius, these are the most important facts which can be considered as proved:—First, that he was acquainted with the technical business of the Secretary of State's office; secondly, that he was acquainted with the business of the War Office; thirdly, that during the year 1770, attended debates in the House of Commons, and took notes of speeches, particularly of the speech of Lord Chatham; fourthly, that he bitterly resented the appointment of Chamier to the place of Deputy Secretary-at-War; fifthly, that he was bound by some strong tie to the first Lord Holland. He passed some years in the Secretary of State's office. He

a chief justice and the  
Calcutta. This Court  
al and Council, and wa  
of immense and, at the

lors were named in the  
e years. Hastings was  
four new Councillors, M  
ny, was then in India.  
n, and Mr. Francis, wer

ER X.

"LETTERS OF JUNIUS."

rs was, beyond all do  
tions prove that he pos  
n. Several years pass  
ts of business. His ene  
nd manly spirit; and h  
that his estimate of hi  
was irritable, that his d  
t his hatred was of inte

his eminent man without  
his name at once suggest  
letters of Junius? Our  
is, we think, such as wou  
l proceeding. The hand  
ing of Francis, slightly  
nections of Junius, the  
h can be considered  
ed with the technical for  
ndly, that he was  
he War Office; thirdly  
ates in the House of l  
arly of the speeches  
resented the appointme  
ecretary-at-War; fifthly  
rst Lord Holland. Now  
of State's office. He w

of clerk of the War Office. He repeatedly mentioned that  
self, in 1770, heard speeches of Lord Chatham; and some  
eetings were actually printed from his notes. He resigned  
ip of the War Office from resentment at the appointment of  
er. It was by Lord Holland that he was first introduced  
blic service. Now, here are five marks, all of which ought  
in Junius. They are all five found in Francis. We do not  
t more than two of them can be found in any other person  
If this argument does not settle the question, there is an  
reasoning on circumstantial evidence.

rnal evidence seems to us to point the same way. The style  
bears a strong resemblance to that of Junius; nor are we  
o admit, what is generally taken for granted, that the  
ged compositions of Francis are very decidedly inferior to  
ous letters. The argument from inferiority, at all events,  
ich may be urged with at least equal force against every  
at has ever been mentioned, with the single exception of  
d it would be a waste of time to prove that Burke was not  
And what conclusion, after all, can be drawn from mere  
Every writer must produce his best work; and the  
tween his best work and his second best work may be very  
d. Nobody will say that the best letters of Junius are more  
superior to the acknowledged works of Francis than three or  
ornille's tragedies to the rest, than three or four of Ben  
omedies to the rest, than the Pilgrim's Progress to the other  
unyan, than Don Quixote to the other works of Cervantes.  
ertain that Junius, whoever he may have been, was a most  
riter. To go no further than the letters which bear the  
f Junius: the letter to the King and the letters to Horne  
e little in common, except the asperity; and asperity was an  
seldom wanting either in the writings or in the speeches of

one of the strongest reasons for believing that Francis was  
he moral resemblance between the two men. It is not diffi-  
the letters which, under various signatures, are known to  
written by Junius, and from his dealings with Woodfall and  
form a tolerably correct notion of his character. He was  
an not destitute of real patriotism and magnanimity, a man  
s were not of a sordid kind. But he must also have been a  
e highest degree arrogant and insolent, a man prone to  
ce, and prone to the error of mistaking his malevolence for

public virtue. "Dost thou well to be angry?" was the question asked in old time of the Hebrew prophet. And he answered, "I do well." This was evidently the temper of Junius; and to this he attributed the savage cruelty which disgraces several of his letters. No man is so merciless as he who, under a strong self-delusion, connects his antipathies with his duties. It may be added that Junius, allied with the democratic party by common enmities, was the opposite of a democratic politician. While attacking industry with a ferocity which perpetually violated all the laws of literature, he regarded the most defective parts of old institutions with respect amounting to pedantry, pleaded the cause of Old Sarum with fervour, and contemptuously told the capitalists of Manchester and Leeds that if they wanted votes they might buy land and become holders of Lancashire and Yorkshire. All this, we believe, might have been done with scarcely any change, for a character of Philip Francis.

It is not strange that the great anonymous writer should have been willing at that time to leave the country which had been so powerfully stirred by his eloquence. Everything had gone against him. The party which he clearly preferred to every other, the party of Fox and Grenville, had been scattered by the death of its chief; and the Whigs of Suffolk had led the greater part of it over to the ministerial banner. The ferment produced by the Middlesex election had gone to the root of every faction. Every faction must have been alike an object of aversion to him. His opinions on domestic affairs separated him from the ministers, his opinions on colonial affairs from the Opposition. Under such circumstances he had thrown down his pen in misanthropical despair. His farewell letter to Woodfall bears date the nineteenth of January. In that letter he declared that he must be an idiot to write again; that he had meant well by the cause and the public; that both were ruined; that there were not ten men who would act steadily together on any question. "But it is all alike," he added, "vile and contemptible." You have never flinched that I know of; and I shall always reject the offer of your prosperity." These were the last words of Junius. A year from that time Philip Francis was on his voyage to Bengal.

## CHAPTER XI.

### THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL AND THE COUNCIL.

With the three new Councillors came out the judges of the Supreme Court. The Chief Justice was Sir Elijah Impey. He was a

angry?" was the instance of Hastings; and it is probable that the Governor-  
And he answered, al, if he had searched through all the Inns of Court, could not  
Junius; and to this found an equally serviceable tool. But the members of Council  
several of his letters by no means in an obsequious mood. Hastings greatly disliked  
ong self-delusion, con new form of government, and had no very high opinion of his  
added that Junius, ters. They had heard of this, and were disposed to be  
on enmities, was cious and punctilious. When men are in such a frame of mind,  
while attacking ind tride is sufficient to give occasion to dispute. The members of  
all the laws of literac expected a salute of twenty-one guns from the batteries of Fort  
of old institution. Hastings allowed them only seventeen. They landed in ill-  
cause of Old Sarour. The first civilities were exchanged with cold reserve. On  
bitalists of Manche morrow commenced that long quarrel which, after distracting  
buy land and becom ish India, was renewed in England, and in which all the most  
is, we believe, migh ent statesmen and orators of the age took active part on one or the  
Philip Francis. r side.  
s writer should hav astings was supported by Barwell. They had not always been  
ch had been so powa. But the arrival of the new members of Council from England  
gone against him, rally had the effect of uniting the old servants of the Company.  
ther, the party of rering, Monson, and Francis formed the majority. They instantly  
h of its chief; an sted the government out of the hands of Hastings, condemned,  
the ministerial be ainly not without justice, his late dealings with the Nabob Vizier,  
election had gone elled the English agent from Oude and sent thither a creature of  
ect of aversion to ir own, ordered the brigade which had conquered the unhappy  
from the ministr illas to return to the Company's territories, and instituted a severe  
n. Under such uiry into the conduct of the war. Next, in spite of the Governor-  
anthropical despat neral's remonstrances, they proceeded to exercise, in the most  
teenth of January secrett manner, their new authority over the subordinate presi-  
diot to write again cies; threw all the affairs of Bombay into confusion, and interfered,  
; that both were h an incredible union of rashness and feebleness, in the intestine  
act steadily togeth putes of the Mahratta government. At the same time they fell on  
"vile and contemp internal administration of Bengal, and attacked the whole fiscal and  
shall always reje dicial system, a system which was undoubtedly defective, but which  
words of Junius, was very improbable that gentlemen fresh from England would be  
oyage to Bengal. mpotent to amend. The effect of their reforms was that all pro-  
tection to life and property was withdrawn, and that gangs of robbers  
undered and slaughtered with impunity in the very suburbs of Cal-  
tta. Hastings continued to live in the Government House, and to  
aw the salary of Governor-General. He continued even to take the  
ad at the Council Board in the transaction of ordinary business; for  
judges of the Sup opponents could not but feel that he knew much of which they were  
pey. He was a morant, and that he decided, both surely and speedily, many questions

which to them would have been hopelessly puzzling. But powers of government and the most valuable patronage had from him.

The natives soon found this out. They considered him man, and they acted after their kind. Some of our readers seen, in India, a crowd of crows pecking a sick vulture to bad type of what happens in that country as often as fortune one who has been great and dreaded. In an instant all the who had lately been ready to lie for him, to forge for him, to him, to poison for him, hasten to purchase the favour of his enemies by accusing him. An Indian Government has only understood that it wishes a particular man to be ruined, and four hours it will be furnished with grave charges, supported by depositions so full and circumstantial that any person unaccustomed to Asiatic mendacity would regard them as decisive. It is a signature of the destined victim is not counterfeited at the foot of the illegal compact, and if some treasonable paper is not slipping under the hiding-place in his house. Hastings was now regarded as the power to make or mar the fortune of every man in Bengal. The power passed, as it seemed, into the hands of the new Councillors. Immediately charges against the Governor-General began to pour in. They were eagerly welcomed by the majority, who, to do them justice, were men of too much honour knowingly to countenance false accusations, but who were not sufficiently acquainted with the East to be aware that in that part of the world a very little encouragement from power could call forth in a week more Oateses and Bedloes and Dangerfields than Westminster Hall sees in a century.

It would have been strange indeed if, at such a juncture, Hastings had remained quiet. That bad man was stimulated at once by vanity, by avarice, and by ambition. Now was the time to be avenged on his old enemy, to wreak a grudge of seventeen years, to establish himself in the favour of the majority of the Council, to become the favourite native in Bengal. From the time of the arrival of the new Council he had paid the most marked court to them, and had in consequence been excluded, with all indignity, from the Government House. He was now put into the hands of Francis, with great ceremony, a paucity of retaining several charges of the most serious description. By the sentence of the Council Hastings was accused of putting offices up to sale, and of bribes for suffering offenders to escape. In particular, it was charged that Mahommed Reza Khan had been dismissed with impunity, and in consideration of a great sum paid to the Governor-General.

lessly puzzling. But his read the paper in Council. A violent altercation followed. valuable patronage had complained in bitter terms of the way in which he was treated, with contempt of Nuncomar and of Nuncomar's accusation, and the right of the Council to sit in judgment on the Governor. At Some of our readers next meeting of the Board, another communication from Nuncomar ing a sick vulture to roared. He requested that he might be permitted to attend the entry as often as fortune, and that he might be heard in support of his assertions. In an instant all the tempestuous debate took place. The Governor-General maintained n, to forge for him, to the council-room was not a proper place for such an investigation ; ase the favour of his com persons who were heated by daily conflict with him he could Government has only t spect the fairness of judges ; and that he could not, without han to be ruined, and ing the dignity of his post, submit to be confronted with such a grave charges, sup as Nuncomar. The majority, however, resolved to go into the hat any person unaccu es. Hastings rose, declared the sitting at an end, and left the as decisive. It is followed by Barwell. The other members kept their seats, voted ourterfeited at the fo selves a council, put Clavering in the chair, and ordered Nuncomar ple paper is not slipp called in. Nuncomar not only adhered to the original charges, was now regarded as after the fashion of the East, produced a large supplement. He e of every man in B that Hastings had received a great sum for appointing Rajah f the new Councillors as treasurer of the Nabob's household, and for committing the heral began to pour in of his Highness's person to the Munny Begum. He put in a letter who, to do them just, erting to bear the seal of the Munny Begum, for the purpose of countenance false acquishing the truth of his story. The seal, whether forged, as Hastings with the East to be aved, or genuine, as we are rather inclined to believe, proved nothing. courage from po mar, as everybody knows who knows India, had only to tell the edloes and Dangerfiey Begum that such a letter would give pleasure to the majority of at such a juncture, N council, in order to procure her attestation. The majority, how- stimulated at once b voted that the charge was made out ; that Hastings had corruptly was the time to be ave red between thirty and forty thousand pounds ; and that he ought compelled to refund. e general feeling among the English in Bengal was strongly in nteen years, to establi of the Governor-General. In talents for business, in knowledge ouncil, to become the of the country, in general courtesy of demeanour, he was decidedly rival of the new Cou country, in general courtesy of demeanour, he was decidedly em, and had in conse prior to his persecutors. The servants of the Company were naturally ne Government Hous sed to side with the most distinguished member of their own body great ceremony, a pap at a clerk from the War Office, who, profoundly ignorant of the description. By thi e languages and of the native character, took on himself to regulate s up to sale, and of re y department of the administration. Hastings, however, in spite n particular, it was he general sympathy of his countrymen, was in a most painful issed with impunity, tion. There was still an appeal to higher authority in England. or-General. hat authority took part with his enemies, nothing was left to him

but to throw up his office. He accordingly placed his resignation in the hands of his agent in London, Colonel Maclean. But Maclean was instructed not to produce the resignation, unless it should be ascertained that the feeling at the India House was adverse to the Governor-General.

The triumph of Nuncomar seemed to be complete. He held a levee, to which his countrymen resorted in crowds, and to which on one occasion, the majority of the Council condescended to repair. The house was an office for the purpose of receiving charges against the Governor-General. It was said that, partly by threats, and partly by wheedling, the villainous Brahmin had induced many of the wealthy men in the province to send in complaints. But he was playing a dangerous game. It was not safe to drive to despair a man of such energy and of such determination as Hastings. Nuncomar, with all his cunning, did not understand the nature of the institutions under which he lived. He saw that he had with him the majority of the body which made treaties, gave places, raised taxes. The separation between executive and judicial functions was a thing of which he had no conception. It probably never occurred to him that there was in Bengal an authority perfectly independent of the Council, an authority which could destroy one whom the Council wished to destroy, and send to the gibbet another whom the Council wished to protect. Yet such was the fact. The Supreme Court was, within the sphere of its own duties, altogether independent of the Government. Hastings, with his usual sagacity, had seen how much advantage he might derive from possessing the key of this stronghold; and he had acted accordingly. The Judges, except the Chief Justice, were hostile to the majority of the Council. They had now come for putting this formidable machinery into action.

On a sudden, Calcutta was astounded by the news that Nuncomar had been taken up on a charge of felony, committed, and thrown into the common gaol. The crime imputed to him was that six years before he had forged a bond. The ostensible prosecutor was a native. But it was then and still is the opinion of everybody, idiots and bigots alike, excepted, that Hastings was the real mover in the business.

The rage of the majority rose to the highest point. They primed against the proceedings of the Supreme Court, and sent several remonstrances to the Judges, demanding that Nuncomar should be admitted to bail. The Judges returned haughty and resolute answers. All that the Council could do was to heap honours and emoluments on the shoulders of Nuncomar, and this they did. In the meantime the assize commenced; a true bill was found, and Nuncomar was brought before the

The excitement among all classes was great. Francis and Francis's English adherents described the Governor-General and the Chief Justice as the worst of murderers. Clavering, it was said, swore that he would see the man who had hanged the native, even at the foot of the gallows Nuncomar should be rescued. The bulk of the European society, though strongly attached to the Governor-General, could not but feel compassion for a man who, with all his crimes, had so long filled so large a space in their sight, who had been great and powerful before the British Empire in India began to exist, and to whom in the old times Governors and members of Council, then mere commercial factors, had paid court for protection. The feeling of the Hindoos were infinitely stronger. They were, indeed, not a people to strike one blow for their countryman. But his sentence filled them with sorrow and dismay. Tried even by their low standard of morality,

he was a bad man. But, bad as he was, he was the head of a sect and religion, a Brahmin of the Brahmins. He had inherited the highest and highest caste. He had practised with the greatest punctilio those ceremonies to which the superstitious Bengalees ascribe more importance than to the correct discharge of the social duties. He felt, therefore, as a devout Catholic in the dark ages would have felt, seeing a prelate of the highest dignity sent to the gallows by a secular tribunal. According to their old national laws, a Brahmin was to be put to death for any crime whatever. And the crime for which Nuncomar was about to die was regarded by them in much the same light in which the selling of an unsound horse for a sound one is regarded by a Yorkshire jockey.

The Mussulmans alone appear to have seen with exultation the fall of the powerful Hindoo, who had attempted to rise by means of the ruin of Mahommed Reza Khan. The Mahomedan historian sometimes takes delight in aggravating the charge. He assures us that in Nuncomar's house a casket was found containing counterfeit seals of all the richest men of the province. We have never seen any other authority for this story, which in itself is by no means improbable.

The day drew near ; and Nuncomar prepared himself to die with the quiet fortitude with which the Bengalee, so effeminately timid in personal conflict, often encounters calamities for which there is no remedy. The sheriff, with the humanity which is seldom wanting in an English gentleman, visited the prisoner on the eve of the execution, and assured him that no indulgence consistent with the law would be shown. He refused to him. Nuncomar expressed his gratitude with great politeness and unaltered composure. Not a muscle of his face moved. No tears broke from him. He put his finger to his forehead, and calmly said that fate would have its way, and that there was no resistance to the pleasure of God. He sent his compliments to Francis, Claverhouse, Monson, and charged them to protect Rajah Goordas, who was to become the head of the Brahmins of Bengal. The day of execution was greatly agitated by what had passed, and Nuncomar sat down to write notes and examine accounts.

The next morning, before the sun was in his power, a immense concourse assembled round the place where the gallows had been erected. Grief and horror were on every face ; yet to the last the multitude could hardly believe that the English really purposed to take the life of the Great Brahmin. At length the mournful procession came on, and the crowd. Nuncomar sat up in his palanquin, and looked round

he was the head of altered serenity. He had just parted from those who were most  
 He had inherited connected with him. Their cries and contortions had appalled  
 the greatest punishment European ministers of justice, but had not produced the smallest  
 the Bengalees ascribed to the iron stoicism of the prisoner. The only anxiety which he  
 of the social duties was that men of his own priestly caste might be in attendance  
 the dark ages would have charge of his corpse. He again desired to be remembered to his  
 to the gallows by in the Council, mounted the scaffold with firmness, and gave the  
 laws, a Brahmin to the executioner. The moment that the drop fell a howl of  
 And the crime of and despair rose from the innumerable spectators. Hundreds  
 by them in much away their faces from the polluting sight, fled with loud wailings  
 horse for a sound in the Hoogley, and plunged into its holy waters, as if to purify  
 themselves from the guilt of having looked on such a crime. These  
 men with exultation were not confined to Calcutta. The whole province was greatly  
 and to rise by means; and the population of Dacca, in particular, gave strong signs of  
 commedian historian and dismay.  
 ge. He assures us Impey's conduct it is impossible to speak too severely. We have  
 containing counterfeitly said that, in our opinion, he acted unjustly in refusing to respite  
 We have never tomas. No rational man can doubt that he took this course in  
 in itself is by not to gratify the Governor-General. If we had ever had any doubts  
 at point they would have been dispelled by a letter which Mr. Gleig  
 red himself to die was published. Hastings, three or four years later, described Impey as  
 so effeminately a man "to whose support he was at one time indebted for the safety  
 ties for which the is fortune, honour, and reputation." These strong words can refer  
 ch is seldom wanting to the case of Nuncomar; and they must mean that Impey hanged  
 eve of the execution comar in order to support Hastings. It is, therefore, our deliberate  
 with the law she sion that Impey, sitting as a judge, put a man unjustly to death in  
 tude with great poler to serve a political purpose.  
 face moved. No but we look on the conduct of Hastings in a somewhat different light  
 forehead, and calm was struggling for fortune, honour, liberty, all that makes life  
 ere was no resistable. He was beset by rancorous and unprincipled enemies. From  
 Francis, Claverin colleagues he could expect no justice. He cannot be blamed for  
 ordas, who w crush his accusers. He was indeed bound to use only legiti-  
 The story is for that end. But it was not strange that he should have  
 unccugh any means legitimate which were pronounced legitimate by the  
 gen to the law, by men whose peculiar duty it was to deal justly  
 his power, an im between adversaries, and whose education might be supposed to have  
 allows had been peculiarly qualified them for the discharge of that duty. Nobody  
 the last the mul demands from a party the unbending equity of a judge. The reason  
 sed to take the at judges are appointed is that even a good man cannot be trusted to  
 cession came the ocide a cause which he is himself concerned. Not a day passes  
 and looked round a which an honest prosecutor does not ask for what none but a dis-

honest tribunal would grant. It is too much to expect that when his dearest interests are at stake and his strongest excited, will, as against himself, be more just than the sworn of justice. To take an analogous case from the history of the island: suppose that Lord Stafford, when in the Tower on being concerned in the Popish plot, had been apprised that he had done something which might, by a questionable construction, be brought under the head of felony. Should we severely blame Lord Stafford, in the supposed case, for causing a prosecution to be instituted for furnishing funds, for using all his influence to intercept the progress of the Crown? We think not. If a judge, indeed, from favouring Catholic lords, were to strain the law in order to hang Oates, the judge would richly deserve impeachment. But it does not appear that the Catholic lord, by bringing the case before the judge for decision, would materially overstep the limits of a just self-defence.

While, therefore, we have not the least doubt that this measure of execution is to be attributed to Hastings, we doubt whether it can be reckoned among his crimes. That his conduct was guided by a profound policy is evident. He was in a minority in Council, and it was possible that he might long be in a minority. He knew the character of the natives well. He knew in what abundance accusations are offered against the most innocent inhabitant of India who is unfavourably affected by the frown of power. There was not in the whole black population of the island a place-holder, a place-hunter, a government tenant, who did not think that he might better himself by sending up a deposition against the Governor-General. Under these circumstances, the persecuted man resolved to teach the whole crew of accusers and witnesses a lesson, though in a minority at the Council Board, he was still to be heard. The lesson which he gave them was indeed a lesson not to be forgotten. The head of the combination which had been formed against the richest, the most powerful, the most artful of the Hindoos, distinguished by the favour of those who then held the government, surrounded by the superstitious reverence of millions, was hanged in a day before many thousands of people. Everything that could make the warning impressive—dignity in the sufferer, solemnity in the process—was found in this case. The helpless rage and vain struggles of the Council made the triumph more signal. From that moment the conviction of every native was that it was safer to take the part of Hastings in a minority than that of Francis in a majority, and that he was so venturous as to join in running down the Governor-General, in the phrase of the Eastern poet, to find a tiger while he



Treasury, exhorting all the supporters of Government who stock to be in attendance. Lord Sandwich marshalled the administration with his usual dexterity and alertness. and privy councillors, seldom seen so far eastward, were crowded. The debate lasted till midnight. The opponents had a small superiority on the division ; but a ballot was decided the result was that the Governor-General triumphed by above a hundred votes over the combined efforts of the Directors and the Cabinet. The Ministers were greatly exasperated by the result. Even Lord North lost his temper, no ordinary occurrence which threatened to convoke Parliament before Christmas, and to pass a bill for depriving the Company of all political power, and forcing it to its old business of trading in silks and teas.

Colonel Maclean, who through all this conflict had zealously supported the cause of Hastings, now thought that his employment was in imminent danger of being turned out, branded with parliamentary censure, perhaps prosecuted. The opinion of the Crown had already been taken respecting some parts of the Governor-General's conduct. It seemed to be high time to think of securing an honorable retreat. Under these circumstances, Maclean thought himself obliged in producing the resignation with which he had been entrusted that the instrument was not in very accurate form ; but the Directors were too eager to be scrupulous. They accepted the resignation, fixed Mr. Wheler, one of their own body, to succeed Hastings, and sent out with that General Clavering, as senior member of the Council, to discharge the functions of Governor-General till Mr. Wheler should arrive.

But while these things were passing in England, a great change had taken place in Bengal. Monson was no more. Only four members of the government were left. Clavering and Francis were on one side, and the Governor-General on the other, and the Governor-General had the casting vote. Hastings, who had been during two years the first of all power and patronage, became at once absolute. He immediately proceeded to retaliate on his adversaries. Their measures were annulled, their creatures were displaced. A new valuation of the lands of Bengal for the purposes of taxation, was ordered ; and it was provided that the whole inquiry should be conducted by the Governor-General, and that all the letters relating to it should run in his name. He began at the same time, to revolve vast plans of conquest and dominion, plans which he lived to see realized, though not by himself. His project was to form subsidiary alliances with the native princes, particularly with the rulers of Oude and Berar, and thus to make Britain the paramount

of Government who, while he was meditating these great designs, arrived the intel-  
 andwich marshalled that he had ceased to be Governor-General, that his resignation  
 xterity and alertness. He accepted, that Wheler was coming out immediately, and that  
 far eastward, were could arrived the chair was to be filled by Clavering.  
 ight. The opponents (Hastings still been in a minority, he would probably have retired  
 ; but a ballot was den a struggle ; but he was now the real master of British India,  
 eral triumphed by a was not disposed to quit his high place. He asserted that he  
 ined efforts of the Directors given any instructions which could warrant the steps taken  
 eatly exasperated by t. What his instructions had been, he owned he had forgotten.  
 rdinary occurrence with kept a copy of them he had mislaid it. But he was certain  
 ore Christmas, and to had repeatedly declared to the Directors that he would not  
 olitical power, and for. He could not see how the Court, possessed of that declaration  
 and teas. nself, could receive his resignation from the doubtful hands of  
 this conflict had zeal. If the resignation were invalid, all the proceedings which  
 ought that his employund on that resignation were null, and Hastings was still  
 t, branded with parlor-General.  
 ion of the Crown law afterwards affirmed that, though his agent had not acted in con-  
 arts of the Governor with his instructions, he would nevertheless have held himself  
 think of securing an ho by their acts, if Clavering had not attempted to seize the  
 cleane thought himself a power by violence. Whether this assertion were or were not  
 he had been entrusted cannot be doubted that the imprudence of Clavering gave  
 n ; but the Directors as an advantage. The General sent for the keys of the fort  
 l the resignation, fixed f the treasury, took possession of the records, and held a  
 d Hastings, and sent o, at which Francis attended. Hastings took the chair in  
 er of the Council, shor apartment, and Barwell sat with him. Each of the two parties  
 l Mr. Wheler should plausible show of right. There was no authority entitled to their  
 England, a great chnce within fifteen thousand miles. It seemed that there remained  
 re. Only four member of settling the dispute except an appeal to arms ; and from  
 Francis were on one side, an appeal Hastings, confident of his influence over his countrymen  
 nd the Governor-Genia, was not inclined to shrink. He directed the officers of the  
 n during two years on at Fort William and of all the neighbouring stations to obey  
 absolute. He instar orders but his. At the same time, with admirable judgment, he  
 eir measures were reed to submit the case to the Supreme Court and to abide by its  
 uation of the lands of ion. By making this proposition he risked nothing ; yet it was a  
 and it was provided cation which his opponents could hardly reject. Nobody could be  
 Governor-General, ed as a criminal for obeying what the judges should solemnly  
 is name. He began ource to be the lawful government. The boldest man would  
 t and dominion, plan k from taking arms in defence of what the judges should pronounce  
 mself. His project s usurpation. Clavering and Francis, after some delay, unwillingly  
 nces, particularly wnted to abide by the award of the Court. The Court pronounced  
 in the paramount p the resignation was invalid, and that therefore Hastings was still

Governor-General under the Regulating Act ; and the defeat of the Council, finding that the sense of the whole settled against them, acquiesced in the decision.

About this time arrived the news that, after a suit which several years, the Franconian courts had decreed a divorce between and his wife. The Baron left Calcutta, carrying with him the buying an estate in Saxony. The lady became Mrs. Hastings. The event was celebrated by great festivities ; and all the most distinguished persons at Calcutta, without distinction of parties, were invited to the Government House. Clavering, as the Mahomedan chronicler of the story, was sick in mind and body, and excused himself from the splendid assembly. But Hastings, whom, as it should seem, in ambition and in love had put into high good humour, would not be denied. He went himself to the General's house, and at length brought his vanquished rival in triumph to the gay circle which surrounded the bride. The exertion was too much for a frame broken by more than age as well as by disease. Clavering died a few days later.

Wheler, who came out expecting to be Governor-General, was forced to content himself with a seat at the Council Board, and voted with Francis. But the Governor-General, with Barwell and his own casting vote, was still the master. Some change took place at this time in the feeling both of the Court of Directors and the Ministers of the Crown. All designs against Hastings were abandoned, and when his original term of five years expired, he was reappointed. The truth is, that the fearful dangers to which the public interests in every quarter were now exposed made both the North and the Company unwilling to part with a Governor whose talents, experience, and resolution enmity itself was compelled to acknowledge.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### COOTE, THE MAHRATTAS, AND THE FRENCH.

The crisis was indeed formidable. That great and victorious monarch on the throne of which George the Third had taken his seat several years before with brighter hopes than had attended the accession of the long line of English sovereigns, had, by the most senseless government, been brought to the verge of ruin. In America millions of Englishmen were at war with the country from which their blood, language, their religion, and their institutions were derived,

Act; and the defeat of a short time before, they had been as strongly attached as the whole settlement of Norfolk and Leicestershire. The great Powers of Europe, humbled to the dust by the vigour and genius which had enabled the Councils of George the Second, now rejoiced in the prospect of revenge. The time was approaching when our island, while carrying with him the United States of America, and pressed by nearer danger by the too just discontents of Ireland, was to be threatened by the combined arms of France, Spain, and Holland, and to be threatened by the neutrality of the Baltic; when even our maritime supremacy was in jeopardy; when hostile fleets were to command the Straits of the Mexican Sea; when the British flag was to be scarcely able to protect the British Channel. Great as were the faults of the late administration, it was happy for our country that at that conjuncture, the man through which she has ever passed, he was the ruler of her dominions.

frame broken by more than a century. The danger of an attack by sea on Bengal was little to be apprehended. The danger of an alliance with the European enemies of England might form an alliance with the Mahrattas, might furnish that power with troops, arms, and ammunition, and might thus assail our possessions on the side of the East. It was chiefly from the Mahrattas that Hastings anticipated the original seat of that singular people was the wild range of the Western Ghats, which runs along the western coast of India. In the reign of Aurungzeb, the inhabitants of those regions, led by the great Sevajee, began to expand on the possessions of their wealthier and less warlike neighbours. The energy, ferocity, and cunning of the Mahrattas soon made them the most conspicuous among the new powers which were generated by the corruption of the decaying monarchy. At first they were robbers. They soon rose to the dignity of conquerors. Half the provinces of the empire were turned into Mahratta principalities. Freebooters, sprung from low castes and accustomed to menial employments, they became mighty Rajahs. The Bongsals, at the head of a band of plunderers, occupied the vast region of Berar. The Guicowar, which is, in English, interpreted, the Herdsman, founded that dynasty which still reigns at Guzerat. The houses of Scindia and Holkar waxed great in the West. One adventurous captain made his nest on the impregnable rock of Gooti. Another became the lord of the thousand villages which were scattered among the green rice-fields of Tanjore.

## THE FRENCH.

eat and victorious was the time, throughout India, of double government. The French and the power were everywhere separated. The Mussulman and the power were everywhere separated. The Mussulman who had become sovereign princes, the Vizier in Oude, and the French at Hyderabad, still called themselves the viceroys of the house of the Great Mogul.

of Tamerlane. In the same manner the Mahratta States, the independent of each other, pretended to be members of a confederacy. They all acknowledged, by words and ceremonies, the supremacy of the heir of Sevajee, a *roi fainéant* who chewed bang and toyed with girls in a State prison at Sattara, and of his Peshwa, or minister, who resided in a palace, a great hereditary magistrate, who kept a court of justice at Poonah, and whose authority was obeyed in the provinces of Aurungabad and Bejapoor.

Some months before war was declared in Europe the Governor of Bengal was alarmed by the news that a French adventurer, well known for a man of quality, had arrived at Poonah. It was said that he had been received there with great distinction, that he had delivered to the Peshwa letters and presents from Louis the Sixteenth, and that a treaty, hostile to England, had been concluded between France and the Mahrattas.

Hastings immediately resolved to strike the first blow. Though the Peshwa was not undisputed. A portion of the Mahratta nation was favourable to a pretender. The Governor-General determined to counteract this pretender's interest, to move an army across the peninsula, and to form a close alliance with the chief of the house of Bonaparte, the ruler of Berar, and who, in power and dignity, was inferior to none of the Mahratta princes.

The army had marched, and the negotiations with Berar were in progress, when a letter from the English consul at Cairo brought news that war had been proclaimed both in London and Paris. Measures which the crisis required were adopted by Hastings without moment's delay. The French factories in Bengal were seized. Orders were sent to Madras that Pondicherry should instantly be occupied. Near Calcutta, works were thrown up which were thought to render the approach of a hostile force impossible. A maritime establishment was formed for the defence of the river. Nine new battalions of infantry were raised, and a corps of native artillery was formed out of the Lascars of the Bay of Bengal. Having made these arrangements, the Governor-General, with calm confidence, pronounced his position secure from all attack, unless the Mahrattas should march against him in conjunction with the French.

The expedition which Hastings had sent westward was not so speedy or completely successful as most of his undertakings. The commander was an officer procrastinated. The authorities at Bombay blundered. But the Governor-General persevered. A new commander repaired the mistakes of his predecessor. Several brilliant actions spread the military name.

the Mahratta States, though through regions where no European flag had ever been to be members of, is probable that, if a new and more formidable danger had not ceremonies, the supreme Hastings to change his whole policy, his plans respecting the red bang and toyed with empire would have been carried into complete effect. of his Peshwa, or authorities of England had wisely sent out to Bengal as commander of the forces and member of the Council, one of the most distinguished who kept a court of the soldiers of that time. Sir Eyre Coote had, many years before, was obeyed in the soldiers of that time. Sir Eyre Coote had, many years before, conspicuous among the founders of the British empire in the East. in Europe the Government of war which preceded the battle of Plassey he earnestly French adventurer, ended, in opposition to the majority, that daring course which, onah. It was said time hesitation, was adopted, and which was crowned with such n, that he had delivered success. He subsequently commanded in the south of India is the Sixteenth, at the brave and unfortunate Lally, gained the decisive battle of luded between France wash over the French and their native allies, took Pondicherry, ade the English power supreme in the Carnatic. Since those e the first blow. The exploits near twenty years have elapsed. Coote had no longer on of the Mahratta nobility activity which he had shown in earlier days; nor was the General determined to of his mind altogether unimpaired. He was capricious and across the peninsula, and required much coaxing to keep him in good humour. It of the house of Bonaparte, we fear, be added that the love of money had grown upon him, y, was inferior to none that he thought more about his allowances and less about his duties night have been expected from so eminent a member of so noble a nations with Berar mission. Still he was perhaps the ablest officer that was then to be consul at Cairo brot in the British army. Among the native soldiers his name was London and Paris, and his influence unrivalled. Nor is he yet forgotten by them. pted by Hastings was and then a white-bearded old sepoy may still be found who loves Bengal were seized. alk of Porto Novo and Pollilore. It is but a short time since one of ould instantly be o aged men came to present a memorial to an English officer who were thought to rem one of the highest employments in India. A print of Coote hung maritime establishme e room. The veteran recognised at once that face and figure which new battalions of ad not seen for more than half a century, and, forgetting his salams s formed out of the ie living, halted, drew himself up, lifted his hand, and with solemn e these arrangements rence paid his military obeisance to the dead. e pronounced his pres Coote, though he did not, like Barwell, vote constantly with the should march aga ernor-General, was by no means inclined to join in systematic oppo on, and on most questions concurred with Hastings, who did his ward was not so sp t, by assiduous courtship, and by readily granting the most kings. The comma rbitant allowances, to gratify the strongest passions of the old ay blundered. B alier. t seemed likely at this time that a general reconciliation would put der repaired the end to the quarrels which had, during some years, weakened and ad the military re

disgraced the government of Bengal. The dangers of might well induce men of patriotic feeling—and of passion—neither Hastings nor Francis was destitute—to forget private interests and to co-operate heartily for the general good. Cootner had been concerned in faction. Wheeler was thoroughly dissatisfied. Barwell had made an ample fortune, and, though he had promised, he would not leave Calcutta while his help was needed in the most desirous to return to England, and exerted himself to obtain an arrangement which would set him at liberty.

A compact was made, by which Francis agreed to desist from his position, and Hastings engaged that the friends of Francis should be admitted to a fair share of the honours and emoluments of the Council Board. During a few months after this treaty there was apparent harmony in the Council Board.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

### IMPEY'S REIGN OF TERROR.

Harmony, indeed, was never more necessary; for at this time internal calamities, more formidable than war itself, menaced the settlement. The authors of the Regulating Act of 1773 had established independent powers, the one judicial, and the other political; and the carelessness scandalously common in English legislation, had not defined the limits of either. The judges took advantage of this distinctness, and attempted to draw to themselves supreme authority only within Calcutta, but through the whole of the great territory subject to the Presidency of Fort William. There are few Englishmen who will not admit that the English law, in spite of modern improvements, is neither so cheap nor so speedy as might be wished. It is a system which has grown up among us. In some points it is fashioned to suit our feelings; in others it has gradually fashioned its feelings to suit itself. Even to its worst evils we are accustomed; therefore, though we may complain of them, they do not strike us with the horror and dismay which would be produced by a new grievance of smaller severity. In India the case is widely different. English law transplanted to that country, has all the vices from which it is free here; it has them all in a far higher degree; and it has others, compared with which the worst vices from which we suffer are trifles. Dilatory here, it is far more dilatory in a land where the help of an interpreter is needed by every judge and by every advocate.

gal. The dangers of a more costly in a land into which the legal practitioners  
ic feeling—and of pa<sup>rted</sup> from an immense distance. All English labour in  
titute—to forget priv<sup>the</sup> labour of the Governor-General and the Commander-in-  
general good. Coot<sup>to</sup> that of a groom or a watchmaker, must be paid for at a  
ler was thoroughly than at home. No man will be banished, and banished to  
and, though he had pr<sup>sons</sup>, for nothing. The rule holds good with respect to the  
help was needed in <sup>cases</sup>. No English barrister will work, fifteen thousand  
d exerted himself to all his friends, with the thermometer at ninety-six in the  
liberty. the emoluments which will content him in chambers that

ncis agreed to desist he Thames. Accordingly, the fees at Calcutta are about  
the friends of Francis as great as the fees at Westminster Hall; and this, though  
and emoluments of t<sup>of</sup> India are, beyond all comparison, poorer than the people  
there was apparent h.

## XV.

## TERROR.

necessary; for at this every suit; and the feeling of a Quaker about an oath is hardly  
n war itself, menace than that of a respectable native. That the apartments of a  
73 had established of quality should be entered by strange men, or that her face  
e other political; and e seen by them, are, in the East, intolerable outrages, outrages  
ish legislation, had e more dreaded than death, and which can be expiated only  
took advantage of the shedding of blood. To these outrages the most distinguished  
selves supreme auth<sup>of</sup> Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, were now exposed. Imagine  
ole of the great terr<sup>le</sup> state of our country would be if a jurisprudence were on a  
There are few Eng introduced among us which should be to us what our juris-  
a spite of modern ce was to our Asiatic subjects. Imagine what the state of our  
might be wished. y would be if it were enacted that any man, by merely swearing  
In some points it debt was due to him, should acquire a right to insult the persons  
has gradually fashio of the most honourable and sacred callings and of women of the  
ls we are accustomed hrinking delicacy, to horsewhip a general officer, to put a bishop  
they do not strike stocks, to treat ladies in the way which called forth the blow of  
uced by a new gri<sup>tyler</sup>. Something like this was the effect of the attempt which  
y different. Eng<sup>supreme</sup> Court made to extend its jurisdiction over the whole of  
ices from which w<sup>ompany's</sup> territory.

and it has other sign of terror began, of terror heightened by mystery; for even  
which we suffer are which was endured was less horrible than that which was antici-  
nd where the help. No man knew what was next to be expected from this strange  
every advocate. nal. It came from beyond the black water, as the people of India,

with mysterious horror, call the sea. It consisted of j whom was familiar with the usages of the millions of claimed boundless authority. Its records were kept characters; its sentences were pronounced in unknown already collected round itself an army of the worst population—informers, and false witnesses, and common agents of chicane, and, above all, a banditti of bailiff's follo with whom the retainers of the worst English sponging worst times, might be considered as upright and tender-hearted natives, highly considered among their countrymen, were up to Calcutta, flung into the common gaol, not for an imputed, not for any debt that had been proved, but mere caution till their cause should come to trial. There were which men of the most venerable dignity, persecuted w by extortioners, died of rage and shame in the gripe of the of Impey. The harems of noble Mahomedans, sanctuar in the East by governments which respected nothing else open by gangs of bailiffs. The Mussulmans, braver and less to submission than the Hindoos, sometimes stood on their d there were instances in which they shed their blood in the while defending, sword in hand, the sacred apartments of the Nay, it seemed as if even the faint-hearted Bengalee, who h at the feet of Surajah Dowlah, who had been mute during t tration of Vansitart, would at length find courage in d Mahratta invasion had ever spread through the province suc this inroad of English lawyers. All the injustice of former Asiatic and European, appeared as a blessing when compar justice of the Supreme Court.

Every class of the population, English and native, with t of the ravenous pettifoggers who fattened on the misery a an immense community, cried out loudly against this fearful But the judges were immovable. If a bailiff was resisted t the soldiers to be called out. If a servant of the Company, i with the orders of the Government, withstood the miserable who, with Impey's writs in their hands, exceeded the i rapacity of gang-robbers, he was flung into prison for a con lapse of sixty years, the virtue and wisdom of many eminent who have during that time administered justice in the Sup have not effaced from the minds of the people of Bengal the of those evil days.

The members of the Government were, on this subject, u

ea. It consisted of judges who had courted the judges; he had found them useful  
 ges of the millions of; but he was not disposed to make them his own masters,  
 ts records were kept of India. His mind was large; his knowledge of the  
 nounced in unknown facts most accurate. He saw that the system pursued by  
 rmy of the worst part of the Court was degrading to the Government and ruinous to  
 witnesses, and common and he resolved to oppose it manfully. The consequence  
 anditti of bailiffs followed friendship, if that be the proper word for such a con-  
 worst English sponging which had existed between him and Impey, was for a time  
 upright and tender-hearted dissolved. The Government placed itself firmly between  
 air countrymen, were sal tribunal and the people. The Chief Justice proceeded to  
 amon gaol, not for an excesses. The Governor-General and all the members of  
 been proved, but were served with writs, calling on them to appear before the  
 to trial. There were, and to answer for their public acts. This was too  
 dignity, persecuted wretches, with just scorn, refused to obey the call, set at liberty  
 me in the gripe of the wrongfully detained by the Court, and took measures for  
 ahommedans, sanctuaries outrageous proceedings of the sheriff's officers, if necessary,  
 respected nothing else. But he had in view another device, which might prevent  
 ulmans, braver and less of an appeal to arms. He was seldom at a loss for an  
 etimes stood on their; and he knew Impey well. The expedient in this case was  
 shed their blood in the same one, neither more nor less than a bribe. Impey was, by  
 sacred apartments of parliament, a judge, independent of the Government of Bengal,  
 started Bengalee, who led to a salary of eight thousand a year. Hastings proposed  
 ad been mute during him also a judge in the Company's service, removable at the  
 th find courage in of the Government of Bengal; and to give him, in that capa-  
 ough the province such at eight thousand a year more. It was understood that, in  
 he injustice of formation of this new salary, Impey would desist from urging the  
 blessing when comparison of his court. If he did urge these pretensions, the  
 ent could, at a moment's notice eject him from the new place  
 h and native, with the had been created for him. The bargain was struck; Bengal was  
 ned on the misery an appeal to force was averted; and the Chief Justice was rich,  
 y against this fearful infamous.

bailliff was resisted the pey's conduct it is unnecessary to speak. It was of a piece with  
 t of the Company, in every part of his conduct that comes under the notice of history.  
 understood the miserable r such judge has dishonoured the English ermine since Jefferies  
 ls, exceeded the im himself to death in the Tower. But we cannot agree with those  
 to prison for a contem he blamed Hastings for this transaction. The case stood thus.  
 m of many eminent gilent manner in which the Regulating Act had been framed  
 justice in the Supra the power of the Chief Justice to throw a great country into  
 people of Bengal the most dreadful confusion. He was determined to use his power to  
 lost unless he was paid to be still; and Hastings consented to  
 on this subject, unim. The necessity was to be deplored. It is also to be deplored

that pirates should be able to exact ransom by threatening to make their captives walk the plank. But to ransom a captive from pirates has always been held a humane and Christian act; and it would be absurd to charge the payer of the ransom with corrupting the virtue of the corsair. This, we seriously think, is a not unfair illustration of the relative position of Impey, Hastings, and the people of India. Whether it was right in Impey to demand or to accept a price for powers which, if they really belonged to him, he could not abdicate, which, if they did not belong to him, he ought never to have usurped, and which in neither case he could honestly sell, is one question. It was quite another question whether Hastings was not right to give any sum, however large, to any man, however worthless, rather than either surrender millions of human beings to pillage, or rescue them by civil war.

Francis strongly opposed this arrangement. It may, indeed, be suspected that personal aversion to Impey was as strong a motive with Francis as regard for the welfare of the province. To a mind burning with resentment, it might seem better to leave Bengal to the oppressors than to redeem it by enriching them. It is not improbable, on the other hand, that Hastings may have been the more willing to resort to an expedient agreeable to the Chief Justice, because that high functionary had already been so serviceable, and might, when existing dissensions were composed, be serviceable again.

But it was not on this point alone that Francis was now opposed to Hastings. The peace between them proved to be only a short and hollow truce, during which their mutual aversion was constantly becoming stronger. At length an explosion took place. Hastings publicly charged Francis with having deceived him, and with having induced Barwell to quit the service by insincere promises. Then came a dispute, such as frequently arises even between honourable men when they may make important agreements by mere verbal communication. An impartial historian will probably be of opinion that they had misunderstood each other; but their minds were so much embittered that they imputed to each other nothing less than deliberate villainy. "I do not," said Hastings, in a minute recorded on the Consultations of the Government, "I do not trust to Mr. Francis's promise of candour, convinced that he is incapable of it. I judge of his public conduct by his private, which I have found to be void of truth and honour." After the Council had risen, Francis put a challenge into the Governor-General's hand. It was instantly accepted. They met, and fired. Francis was shot through the body. He was carried to a neighbouring house, where it appeared that the wound, though severe

was not mortal, and proper had a proper could not the Council

In a ve

danger th

A crisis

It is not

affairs, th

Asia as t

The M

The mea

power ha

compelle

to be cro

itself in a

About

to distin

had been

petty off

though t

the adve

than he

Among

none co

statesma

fragmen

wreck,

That en

the Ele

had yet

of subje

but he

oppress

intellec

was not mortal. Hastings inquired repeatedly after his enemy's health, and proposed to call on him ; but Francis coldly declined the visit. He had a proper sense, he said, of the Governor-General's politeness, but could not consent to any private interview. They could meet only at the Council Board.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE STRUGGLE WITH HYDER ALI.

In a very short time it was made signally manifest to how great a danger the Governor-General had, on this occasion, exposed his country. A crisis arrived with which he, and he alone, was competent to deal. It is not too much to say that if he had been taken from the head of affairs, the years 1780 and 1781 would have been fatal to our power in Asia as to our power in America.

The Mahrattas had been the chief objects of apprehension to Hastings. The measures which he had adopted for the purpose of breaking their power had at first been frustrated by the errors of those whom he was compelled to employ ; but his perseverance and ability seemed likely to be crowned with success, when a far more formidable danger showed itself in a distant quarter.

About thirty years before this time a Mahommedan soldier had begun to distinguish himself in the wars of Southern India. His education had been neglected ; his extraction was humble. His father had been a petty officer of revenue ; his grandfather a wandering dervish. But though thus meanly descended, though ignorant even of the alphabet, the adventurer had no sooner been placed at the head of a body of troops than he approved himself a man born for conquest and command. Among the crowd of chiefs who were struggling for a share of India, none could compare with him in the qualities of the captain and the statesman. He became a general ; he became a sovereign. Out of the fragments of old principalities, which had gone to pieces in the general wreck, he formed for himself a great, compact, and vigorous empire. That empire he ruled with the ability, severity, and vigilance of Lewis the Eleventh. Licentious in his pleasures, implacable in his revenge, he had yet enlargement of mind enough to perceive how much the prosperity of subjects adds to the strength of governments. He was an oppressor ; but he had at least the merit of protecting his people against all oppression except his own. He was now in extreme old age, but his intellect was as clear and his spirit as high as in the prime of manhood.

Such was the great Hyder Ali, the founder of the Mahomedan kingdom of Mysore, and the most formidable enemy with whom the English conquerors of India have ever had to contend.

Had Hastings been Governor of Madras, Hyder would have been either made a friend, or vigorously encountered as an enemy. Unhappily the English authorities in the South provoked their powerful neighbour's hostility, without being prepared to repel it. On a sudden, an army of ninety thousand men, far superior in discipline and efficiency to any other native force that could be found in India, came pouring through those wild passes which, worn by mountain torrents, and dark with jungle, lead down from the table-land of Mysore to the plains of the Carnatic. This great army was accompanied by a hundred pieces of cannon; and its movements were guided by many French officers, trained in the best military schools of Europe.

Hyder was everywhere triumphant. The sepoy in many British garrisons flung down their arms. Some forts were surrendered by treachery, and some by despair. In a few days the whole open country north of the Coleroon had submitted. The English inhabitants of Madras could already see by night, from the top of Mount St. Thomas, the eastern sky reddened by a vast semicircle of blazing villages. The white villas, to which our countrymen retire after the daily labours of government and of trade, when the cool evening breeze springs up from the bay, were now left without inhabitants; for bands of the fierce horsemen of Mysore had already been seen prowling among the tulip trees and near the gay verandas. Even the town was not thought secure, and the British merchants and public functionaries made haste to crowd themselves behind the cannon of Fort St. George.

There were the means, indeed, of assembling an army which might have defended the presidency, and even driven the invader back to his mountains. Sir Hector Munro was at the head of one considerable force; Baillie was advancing with another. United they might have presented a formidable front even to such an enemy as Hyder. But the English commanders, neglecting those fundamental rules of the military art, of which the propriety is obvious even to men who have never received a military education, deferred their junction, and were separately attacked. Baillie's detachment was destroyed. Munro was forced to abandon his baggage, to fling his guns into the tanks, and to save himself by a retreat which might be called a flight. In three weeks from the commencement of the war the British empire in Southern India had been brought to the verge of ruin. Only a few fortified places remained to us. The glory of our arms had departed. It was known

that a gr  
Coroman  
dition to

Then  
achieved  
south-we  
In twent  
of policy  
Hyder w  
sacrificed  
Mahratta  
of money  
would be  
were plac  
for triflin  
power, to  
Sir Eyre  
general w

In spite  
from his  
General's  
Board.  
reached  
Coote, br  
wash; bu  
of Hyder  
Novo ret

In the  
now left  
his oppos  
colleagu  
influence  
success  
But, t  
were at  
than eve  
to find t  
out of  
emies  
years b  
and ens  
by any

that a great French expedition might soon be expected on the coast of Coromandel. England, beset by enemies on every side, was in no condition to protect such remote dependencies.

Then it was that the fertile genius and serene courage of Hastings achieved their most signal triumph. A swift ship, flying before the south-west monsoon, brought the evil tidings in a few days to Calcutta. In twenty-four hours the Governor-General had framed a complete plan of policy adapted to the altered state of affairs. The struggle with Hyder was a struggle for life and death. All minor objects must be sacrificed to the preservation of the Carnatic. The disputes with the Mahrattas must be accommodated. A large military force and a supply of money must be instantly sent to Madras. But even these measures would be insufficient unless the war, hitherto so grossly mismanaged, were placed under the direction of a vigorous mind. It was no time for trifling. Hastings determined to resort to an extreme exercise of power, to suspend the incapable Governor of Fort St. George, to send Sir Eyre Coote to oppose Hyder, and to intrust that distinguished general with the whole administration of the war.

In spite of the sullen opposition of Francis, who had now recovered from his wound, and had returned to the Council, the Governor-General's wise and firm policy was approved by the majority of the Board. The reinforcements were sent off with great expedition, and reached Madras before the French armament arrived in the Indian seas. Coote, broken by age and disease, was no longer the Coote of Wandewash; but he was still a resolute and skilful commander. The progress of Hyder was arrested; and in a few months the great victory of Porto Novo retrieved the honour of the English arms.

In the meantime Francis had returned to England, and Hastings was now left perfectly unfettered. Wheeler had gradually been relaxing in his opposition, and, after the departure of his vehement and implacable colleague, co-operated heartily with the Governor-General, whose influence over the British in India, always great, had, by the vigour and success of his recent measures, been considerably increased.

But, though the difficulties arising from factions within the Council were at an end, another class of difficulties had become more pressing than ever. The financial embarrassment was extreme. Hastings had to find the means not only of carrying on the government of Bengal, but of maintaining a most costly war against both Indian and European enemies in the Carnatic, and of making remittances to England. A few years before this time he had obtained relief by plundering the Mogul and enslaving the Rohillas; nor were the resources of his fruitful mind by any means exhausted.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## BENARES AND THE CONFLICTING RULE.

His first design was on Benares, a city which, in wealth, power, dignity, and sanctity, was among the foremost of Asia. It was commonly believed that half a million of human beings was crowded into that labyrinth of lofty alleys, rich with shrines, and minar balconies, and carved oriels, to which the sacred apes resorted in hundreds. The traveller could scarcely make his way through a mass of holy mendicants and not less holy bulls. The broad and steep flights of steps, which descended from these swarming haunts to the bathing-places along the Ganges, were worn every day by the feet of an innumerable multitude of worshippers. The schools and colleges drew crowds of pious Hindoos from every province where the Hindoo faith was known. Hundreds of devotees came thither every year to die; for it was believed that a peculiarly happy fate awaited those who should pass from the sacred city into the sacred river. It was by superstition the only motive which allured strangers to the metropolis. Commerce had as many pilgrims as religion. All the shores of the venerable stream lay great fleets of vessels laden with merchandise. From the looms of Benares went forth the most beautiful silks that adorned the balls of St. James's and Versailles; and the bazaars, the muslins of Bengal and the sabres of Oude were supplied with the jewels of Golconda and the shawls of Cashmere. The city and capital and the surrounding tract had long been under the immediate rule of a Hindoo Prince, who rendered homage to the Mogul emperor. During the great anarchy of India the lords of Benares became independent of the Court of Delhi, but were compelled to submit to the authority of the Nabob of Oude. Oppressed by this formidable neighbour, they invoked the protection of the English. The English protection was given; and at length the Nabob Vizier, by a solemn treaty, ceded all his rights over Benares to the Company. From that time the Rajah was the vassal of the government of Bengal, acknowledged its supremacy, and engaged to send an annual tribute to Fort William. This tribute Cheyte Sing, the reigning prince, had paid with punctuality.

About the precise nature of the legal relation between the Company and the Rajah of Benares there has been much warm and acutely contested controversy. On the one side, it has been maintained that Cheyte Sing was merely a great subject on whom the superior power had a right

## VII.

## CONFLICTING RULE.

id in the necessities of the empire. On the other side, it has been  
 ended that he was an independent prince, that the only claim which  
 Company had upon him was for a fixed tribute, and that, while the  
 tribute was regularly paid, as it assuredly was, the English had  
 no right to exact any further contribution from him than to  
 most of Asia. It and subsidies from Holland or Denmark. Nothing is easier than to  
 an beings was crow precedents and analogies in favour of either view.  
 h shrines, and minor own impression is that neither view is correct. It was too much  
 the sacred apes habit of English politicians to take it for granted that there was in  
 take his way through a known and definite constitution by which questions of this kind  
 bulls. The broad and to be decided. The truth is that during the interval which elapsed  
 these swarming haunts between the fall of the house of Tamerlane and the establishment of the  
 in every day by the British ascendancy, there was no such constitution. The old order of  
 ers. The schools and things had passed away; the new order of things was not yet formed.  
 province where the British was transition, confusion, obscurity. Everybody kept his head as  
 es came thither every best might, and scrambled for whatever he could get. There have  
 y happy fate awaited in similar seasons in Europe. The time of the dissolution of the  
 the sacred river. A longinian empire is an instance. Who would think of seriously  
 red strangers to discussing the question, what extent of pecuniary aid and of obedience  
 ms as religion. All Hugh Capet had a constitutional right to demand from the Duke of  
 ets of vessels laden, tany or the Duke of Normandy? The words "constitutional  
 went forth the most at" had, in that state of society, no meaning. If Hugh Capet laid  
 and Versailles; and ds on all the possessions of the Duke of Normandy, this might be  
 sabres of Oude were ust and immoral; but it would not be illegal, in the sense in which  
 wls of Cashmere. Ordinances of Charles the Tenth were illegal. If, on the other  
 been under the im ad, the Duke of Normandy made war on Hugh Capet, this might be  
 nage to the Moguls just and immoral; but it would not be illegal, in the sense in which  
 ds of Benares became expedition of Prince Louis Bonaparte was illegal.  
 compelled to submit Very similar to this was the state of India sixty years ago. Of the  
 d by this formidable ating governments, not a single one could lay claim to legitimacy, or  
 English. The Eng could plead any other title than recent occupation. There was scarcely  
 Vizier, by a solemn province in which the real sovereignty and the nominal sovereignty  
 npany. From that are not disjoined. Titles and forms were still retained which implied  
 Bengal, acknowledged at the heir of Tamerlane was an absolute ruler, and that the Nabobs  
 al tribute to Fort W the provinces were his lieutenants. In reality, he was a captive.  
 prince, had paid wit the Nabobs were in some places independent princes. In other places,  
 in Bengal and the Carnatic, they had, like their master, become  
 ation between the ere phantoms, and the Company was supreme. Among the Mahrattas,  
 ch warm and acute ain, the heir of Sevajee still kept the title of Rajah; but he was a  
 ned that Cheyte soner, and his prime minister, the Peshwa, had become the hereditary  
 power had a right is of the state. The Peshwa, in his turn, was fast sinking into the

same degraded situation into which he had reduced the Rajah. It was, we believe, impossible to find, from the Himalayas to Mysore, a single government which was at once a government *de facto* and a government *de jure*, which possessed the physical means of making itself feared by its neighbours and subjects, and which had at the same time the authority derived from law and long prescription.

Hastings clearly discerned what was hidden from most of his contemporaries, that such a state of things gave immense advantages to a ruler of great talents and few scruples. In every international question that could arise, he had his option between the *de facto* ground and the *de jure* ground; and the probability was that one of those grounds would sustain any claim that it might be convenient for him to make, and enable him to resist any claim made by others. In every controversy, accordingly, he resorted to the plea which suited his immediate purpose, without troubling himself in the least about consistency; and thus he scarcely ever failed to find what, to persons of short memories and scanty information, seemed to be a justification for what he wanted to do. Sometimes the Nabob of Bengal is a shadow, sometimes a monarch. Sometimes the Vizier is a mere deputy, sometimes an independent potentate. If it is expedient for the Company to show some legal title to the revenues of Bengal, the grant under the seal of the Mogul is brought forward as an instrument of the highest authority. When the Mogul asks for the rents which were reserved to him by that very grant, he is told that he is a mere pageant, that the English power rests on a very different foundation from a charter given by him; that he is welcome to play at royalty as long as he likes, but that he must expect no tribute from the real masters of India.

It is true that it was in the power of others, as well as of Hastings, to practice this legerdemain: but in the controversies of governments, sophistry is of little use unless it be backed by power. There is a principle which Hastings was fond of asserting in the strongest terms, and on which he acted with undeviating steadiness. It is a principle which, we must own, though it may be grossly abused, can hardly be disputed in the present state of public law. It is this, that where an ambiguous question arises between two governments, there is, if they cannot agree, no appeal except to force, and that the opinion of the stronger must prevail. Almost every question was ambiguous in India. The English Government was the strongest in India. The consequences are obvious. The English Government might do exactly what it chose.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## CHEYTE SING PLUNDERED AND BENARES ANNEXED.

The English Government now chose to wring money out of Cheyte Sing. It had formerly been convenient to treat him as a sovereign prince; it was now convenient to treat him as a subject. Dexterity inferior to that of Hastings could easily find, in the general chaos of laws and customs, arguments for either course. Hastings wanted a great supply. It was known that Cheyte Sing had a large revenue, and it was suspected that he had accumulated a treasure. Nor was he a favourite at Calcutta. He had, when the Governor-General was in great difficulties, courted the favour of Francis and Clavering. Hastings, who, less perhaps from evil passions than from policy, seldom left an injury unpunished, was not sorry that the fate of Cheyte Sing should teach neighbouring princes the same lesson which the fate of Nuncomar had already impressed on the inhabitants of Bengal.

In 1778, on the first breaking out of the war with France, Cheyte Sing was called upon to pay, in addition to his fixed tribute, an extraordinary contribution of fifty thousand pounds. In 1779 an equal sum was exacted. In 1780 the demand was renewed. Cheyte Sing, in the hope of obtaining some indulgence, secretly offered the Governor-General a bribe of twenty thousand pounds. Hastings took the money, and his enemies have maintained that he took it intending to keep it. He certainly concealed the transaction, for a time, both from the Council in Bengal and from the Directors at home; nor did he ever give any satisfactory reason for the concealment. Public spirit, or the fear of detection, at last determined him to withstand the temptation. He paid over the bribe to the Company's treasury, and insisted that the Rajah should instantly comply with the demands of the English Government. The Rajah, after the fashion of his countrymen, shuffled, solicited, and pleaded poverty. The grasp of Hastings was not to be so eluded. He added to the requisition another ten thousand pounds as a fine for delay, and sent troops to exact the money.

The money was paid. But this was not enough. The late events in the South of India had increased the financial embarrassments of the Company. Hastings was determined to plunder Cheyte Sing, and, for that end, to fasten a quarrel on him. Accordingly, the Rajah was now required to keep a body of cavalry for the service of the British Government. He objected and evaded. This was exactly what the Governor-General wanted. He had now a pretext for treating the wealthiest of

his vassals as a criminal. "I resolved,"—these are the words of Hastings himself—"to draw from his guilt the means of relief of the company's distresses, to make him pay largely for his pardon, or to demand severe vengeance for past delinquency." The plan was simply to demand larger and larger contributions till the Rajah should be driven to remonstrate, then to call his remonstrance a crime, and to punish by confiscating all his possessions.

Cheyte Sing was in the greatest dismay. He offered two hundred thousand pounds to propitiate the British Government. But Hastings replied that nothing less than half a million would be accepted. He then began to think of selling Benares to Oude, as he had formerly sold Allahabad to Rohilcund. The matter was one which could not be managed at a distance, and Hastings resolved to visit Benares.

Cheyte Sing received his liege lord with every mark of reverence. He came near sixty miles, with his guards, to meet and escort the illustrious visitor, and expressed his deep concern at the displeasure of the English. He even took off his turban, and laid it in the lap of Hastings, a gesture which in India marks the most profound submission and devotion. But Hastings behaved with cold and repulsive severity. Having arrived at Benares, he sent to the Rajah a paper containing the demands of the Government of Bengal. The Rajah, in reply, attempted to clear himself from the accusations brought against him. Hastings, who valued money, not excuses, was not to be put off by the ordinary artifices of Eastern negotiation. He instantly ordered the Rajah to be arrested and placed under the custody of two companies of sepoy.

In taking these strong measures, Hastings scarcely showed his usual judgment. It is possible that, having had little opportunity of personally observing any part of the population of India, except the Bengalees, he was not fully aware of the difference between their character and that of the tribes which inhabit the upper provinces. He was now in a far more favourable position to judge of the human frame than the Deccan; the Ganges; in a land fruitful of soldiers, who have been found willing to follow English battalions to the charge and into the breach. The Rajah was popular among his subjects. His administration had been mild; and the prosperity of the district which he governed presented a striking contrast to the depressed state of Bahar under our rule, and still more striking contrast to the misery of the provinces which had been cursed by the tyranny of the Nabob Vizier. The national and religious prejudices with which the English were regarded throughout India were peculiarly intense in the metropolis of the Brahminical superstition. It can therefore scarcely be doubted that the Governor-General, before

these are the means of relief of his pardon, or to the plan was simply Rajah should be drime, and to punish He offered two government. But Hould be accepted, as he had former which could not to visit Benares, very mark of revand escort the illpleasure of the Eap of Hastings, a submission and deturity. Having arning the demands attempted to clear Hastings, who the ordinary artRajah to be arrestpoys.

arcely showed his opportunity of pers except the Bengale their character and He was now in a frame than the Deave been found winto the breach. ministration had he governed pres under our rule, a provinces which national and relig throughout India nical superstition or-General, before

ed the dignity of Cheyte Sing by an arrest, ought to have assembled capable of bearing down all opposition. This had not been done. andful of sepoys who attended Hastings would probably have ufficient to overawe Moorshedabad, or the Black Town of Calcutta. ey were unequal to a conflict with the hardy rabble of Benares. reets surrounding the palace were filled by an immense multitude, om a large proportion, as is usual in Upper India, wore arms. The it became a fight, and the fight a massacre. The English officers ded themselves with desperate courage against overwhelming ers, and fell, as became them, sword in hand. The sepoys were ured. The gates were forced. The captive prince, neglected by olers during the confusion, discovered an outlet which opened on recipitous bank of the Ganges, let himself down to the water by a g made of the turbans of his attendants, found a boat, and escaped e opposite shore.

Hastings had, by indiscreet violence, brought himself into a difficult perilous situation, it is only just to acknowledge that he extricated elf with even more than his usual ability and presence of mind. He only fifty men with him. The building in which he had taken up idence was on every side blockaded by the insurgents. But his tude remained unshaken. The Rajah, from the other side of the r, sent apologies and liberal offers. They were not even answered. e subtle and enterprising men were found who undertook to pass ough the throng of enemies, and to convey the intelligence of the events to the English cantonments. It is the fashion of the natives ndia to wear large earrings of gold. When they travel, the rings aid aside, lest the precious metal should tempt some gang of robbers; in place of the ring, a quill or a roll of paper is inserted in the ce to prevent it from closing. Hastings placed in the ears of his engers letters rolled up in the smallest compass. Some of these ers were addressed to the commanders of English troops. One was tten to assure his wife of his safety. One was to the envoy whom he sent to negotiate with the Mahrattas. Instructions for the otiation were needed, and the Governor-General framed them in t situation of extreme danger with as much composure as if he had a writing in his palace at Calcutta.

Things, however, were not yet at the worst. An English officer of re spirit than judgment, eager to distinguish himself made a premature ack on the insurgents beyond the river. His troops were entangled narrow streets, and assailed by a furious population. He fell, with ny of his men, and the survivors were forced to retire.

This event produced the effect which has never failed to follow every check, however slight, sustained in India by the English arms. For hundreds of miles round the whole country was in commotion. The entire population of the district of Benares took arms. The fields were abandoned by the husbandmen, who thronged to defend their prince. The infection spread to Oude. The oppressed people of that province rose up against the Nabob Vizier, refused to pay their imposts, and put the revenue officers to flight. Even Bahar was ripe for revolt. The hopes of Cheyte Sing began to rise. Instead of imploring mercy in the humble style of a vassal, he began to talk the language of a conqueror, and threatened, it was said, to sweep the white usurpers out of the land. But the English troops were now assembling fast. The officers, and even the private men, regarded the Governor-General with enthusiastic attachment, and flew to his aid with an alacrity which, as he boasted, had never been shown on any other occasion. Major Popham, a brave and skilful soldier, who had highly distinguished himself in the Mahratta war, and in whom the Governor-General reposed the greatest confidence, took the command. The tumultuary army of the Rajah was put to rout. His fastnesses were stormed. In a few hours above thirty thousand men left his standard and returned to their ordinary avocations. The unhappy prince fled from his country for ever. His fair domain was added to the British dominions. One of his relations indeed was appointed Rajah; but the Rajah of Benares was henceforth to be, like the Nabob of Bengal, a mere pensioner.

By this revolution an addition of two hundred thousand pounds a year was made to the revenues of the Company. But the immediate relief was not as great as had been expected. The treasure laid up by Cheyte Sing had been popularly estimated at a million sterling. It turned out to be about a fourth part of that sum; and, such as it was, it was seized by the army and divided as prize money.

---

## CHAPTER XIX.

### HASTINGS SETS COVETOUS EYES ON OUDE.

Disappointed in his expectations from Benares, Hastings was more violent than he would otherwise have been in his dealings with Oude. Sujah Dowlah had long been dead. His son and successor, Asaph-ul-Dowlah, was one of the weakest and most vicious even of Eastern princes. His life was divided between torpid repose and the most odious forms of sensuality. In his court there was boundless waste; throughout his

follow every  
arms. For  
notion. The  
fields were  
their prince  
that province  
posts, and put  
revolt. The  
mercy in the  
a conqueror,  
rs out of the  
The officers  
with enthusi  
which, as he  
Major Popham  
himself in the  
d the greatest  
the Rajah was  
hours above  
their ordinary  
or ever. His  
f his relations  
was henceforth

pounds a year  
mediate relief  
up by Cheyte  
It turned out  
, it was seized

ags was more  
gs with Oude.  
or, Asaph-ul-  
stern princes.  
ious forms of  
throughout his

ominions, wretchedness and disorder. He had been, under the skilful management of the English government, gradually sinking from the rank of an independent prince to that of a vassal of the Company. It was only by the help of a British brigade that he could be secure from the aggressions of neighbours who despised his weakness, and from the vengeance of subjects who detested his tyranny. A brigade was furnished, and he engaged to defray the charge of paying and maintaining

From that time his independence was at an end. Hastings was not a man to lose the advantage which he had thus gained. The Nabob soon began to complain of the burden which he had undertaken to bear. His revenues, he said, were falling off; his servants were unpaid; he could no longer support the expense of the arrangement which he had sanctioned. Hastings would not listen to these representations. The Vizier, he said, had invited the Government of Bengal to send him troops, and had promised to pay for them. The troops had been sent. How long the troops were to remain in Oude was a matter not settled by the treaty. It remained, therefore, to be settled between the contracting parties. But the contracting parties differed. Who then must decide? The stronger.

Hastings also argued that, if the English force was withdrawn, Oude would certainly become a prey to anarchy, and would probably be overrun by a Mahratta army. That the finances of Oude were embarrassed, he admitted. But he contended, not without reason, that the embarrassment was to be attributed to the incapacity and vices of Asaph-ul-Dowlah himself, and that if less were spent on the troops, the only effect would be that more would be squandered on worthless favourites.

Hastings had intended, after settling the affairs of Benares, to visit Lucknow, and there to confer with Asaph-ul-Dowlah. But the obsequious courtesy of the Nabob Vizier prevented this visit. With a small train he hastened to meet the Governor-General. An interview took place in the fortress which, from the crest of the precipitous rock of Chunar, looks down on the waters of the Ganges.

At first sight it might appear impossible that the negotiation should come to an amicable close. Hastings wanted an extraordinary supply of money. Asaph-ul-Dowlah wanted to obtain a remission of what he already owed. Such a difference seemed to admit of no compromise. There was, however, one course satisfactory to both sides, one course by which it was possible to relieve the finances both of Oude and of Bengal; and that course was adopted. It was simply this, that the Governor-General and the Nabob Vizier should join to rob a third

party; and the third party whom they determined to rob was the parent of one of the robbers.

The mother of the late Nabob, and his wife, who was the mother of the present Nabob, were known as the Begums or Princesses of Oude. They had possessed great influence over Sujah Dowlah, and had, at his death, been left in possession of a splendid dotation. The domains of which they received the rents and administered the government were of wide extent. The treasure hoarded by the late Nabob, a treasure which was popularly estimated at near three millions sterling, was in their hands. They continued to occupy his favourite palace at Fyzabad, the Beautiful Dwelling; while Asaph-ul-Dowlah held his court in the stately Lucknow, which he had built for himself on the shores of the Goomti, and had adorned with noble mosques and colleges.

Asaph-ul-Dowlah had already extorted considerable sums from his mother. She had at length appealed to the English; and the English had interfered. A solemn compact had been made, by which she consented to give her son some pecuniary assistance, and he in his turn promised never to commit any further invasion of her rights. The compact was formally guaranteed by the government of Bengal. But times had changed; money was wanted; and the power which had given the guarantee was not ashamed to instigate the spoiler to excess, such that even he shrank from them.

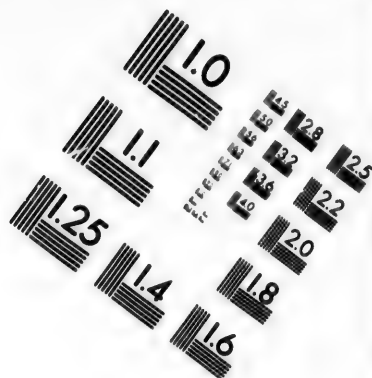
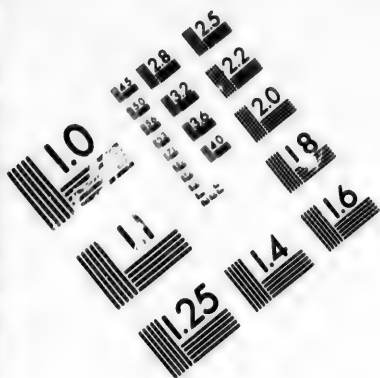
It was necessary to find some pretext for a confiscation inconsistent not merely with plighted faith, not merely with the ordinary rules of humanity and justice, but also with that great law of filial piety which even in the wildest tribes of savages, even in those more degraded communities which wither under the influence of a corrupt half-civilization retains a certain authority over the human mind. A pretext was the last thing that Hastings was likely to want. The insurrection at Benares had produced disturbances in Oude. These disturbances it was convenient to impute to the Princesses. Evidence for the imputation there was scarcely any; unless reports wandering from one mouth to another and gaining something by every transmission, may be called evidence. The accused were furnished with no charge; they were permitted to make no defence; for the Governor-General wisely considered that, if he tried them, he might not be able to find a ground for plundering them. It was agreed between him and the Nabob Vizier that the nobles should, by a sweeping act of confiscation, be stripped of their domains and treasures for the benefit of the Company, and that the sums thus obtained should be accepted by the government of Bengal in satisfaction of its claims on the government of Oude.

While  
by the cl  
when the  
the engag  
mother p  
lute power  
him in t  
hitherto  
Governor  
of the gre  
been agre  
self go to  
dismay.  
insisted t  
diate effe  
solemn pu  
resumed;  
to use vio  
and force  
their own  
stringent  
which, ev  
and sorro  
There v  
class whi  
cluded fr  
as alway  
sympathy  
Sujah Do  
dence to  
head of t  
These  
risoned,  
ne Princ  
health ga  
ne gard  
sated th  
smallest  
the s  
understa  
was not

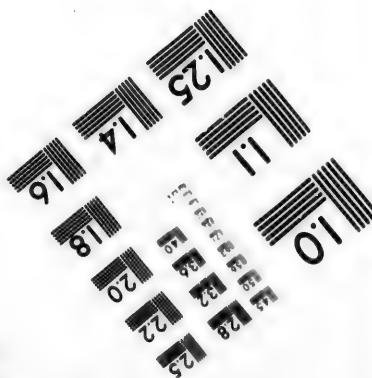
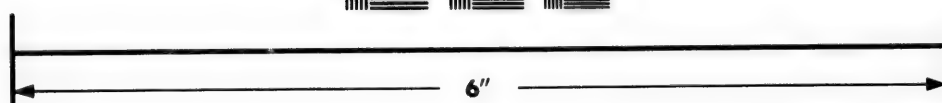
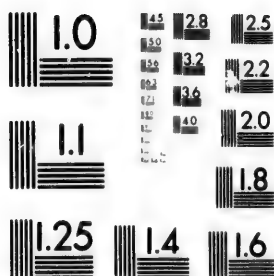
While Asaph-ul-Dowlah was at Chunar he was completely subjugated by the clear and commanding intellect of the English statesman. But, when they had separated, the Vizier began to reflect with uneasiness on the engagements into which he had entered. His mother and grandmother protested and implored. His heart, deeply corrupted by absolute power and licentious pleasures, yet not naturally unfeeling, failed him in this crisis. Even the English resident at Lucknow, though hitherto devoted to Hastings, shrank from extreme measures. But the Governor-General was inexorable. He wrote to the resident in terms of the greatest severity, and declared that if the spoliation which had been agreed upon were not instantly carried into effect, he would himself go to Lucknow, and do that from which feebler minds recoil with dismay. The resident, thus menaced, waited on his highness, and insisted that the treaty of Chunar should be carried into full and immediate effect. Asaph-ul-Dowlah yielded, making at the same time a solemn protestation that he yielded to compulsion. The lands were resumed; but the treasure was not so easily obtained. It was necessary to use violence. A body of the Company's troops marched to Fyzabad, and forced the gates of the palace. The Princesses were confined to their own apartments. But still they refused to submit. Some more stringent mode of coercion was to be found. A mode was found, of which, even at this distance of time, we cannot speak without shame and sorrow.

There were at Fyzabad two ancient men, belonging to that unhappy class which a practice, of immemorial antiquity in the East, has excluded from the pleasures of love, and from the hope of posterity. It has always been held in Asiatic courts that beings thus estranged from sympathy with their kind are those whom princes may most safely trust. Nujah Dowlah had been of this opinion. He had given his entire confidence to the two eunuchs; and after his death they remained at the head of the household of his widow.

These men were, by the orders of the British government, seized, imprisoned, ironed, starved almost to death, in order to extort money from the Princesses. After they had been two months in confinement, their health gave way. They implored permission to take a little exercise in the garden of their prison. The officer who was in charge of them stated that, if they were allowed this indulgence, there was not the smallest chance of their escaping, and that their irons really added nothing to the security of the custody in which they were kept. He did not understand the plan of his superiors. Their object in these inflictions was not security but torture; and all mitigation was refused. Yet this



# IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503



was not the worst. It was resolved by an English government that these two infirm old men should be delivered to the tormentors. For that purpose they were removed to Lucknow. What horrors their dungeons there witnessed can only be guessed. But there remains on the records of Parliament this letter, written by a British resident to a British soldier :—

“Sir, the Nabob having determined to inflict corporal punishment upon the prisoners under your guard, this is to desire that his officers, when they shall come, may have free access to the prisoners, and be permitted to do with them as they shall see proper.”

While these barbarities were perpetrated at Lucknow, the Princesses were still under duress at Fyzabad. Food was allowed to enter their apartments only in such scanty quantities that their female attendants were in danger of perishing with hunger. Month after month this cruelty continued, till at length, after twelve hundred thousand pounds had been wrung out of the Princesses, Hastings began to think that he had really got to the bottom of their coffers, and that no rigour could extort more. Then at length the wretched men who were detained at Lucknow regained their liberty. When their irons were knocked off and the doors of their prison opened, their quivering lips, the tears which ran down their cheeks, and the thanksgivings which they poured forth to the common Father of Mussulmans and Christians, melted even the stout hearts of the English warriors who stood by.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

### THE CHIEF JUSTICE RECALLED.

But we must not forget to do justice to Sir Elijah Impey's conduct on this occasion. It was not indeed easy for him to intrude himself into a business so entirely alien from all his official duties. But there was something inexpressible alluring, we must suppose, in the peculiar rankness of the infamy which was then to be got at Lucknow. He hurried thither as fast as relays of palanquin-bearers could carry him. A crowd of people came before him with affidavits against the Begums, ready drawn in their hands. Those affidavits he did not read. Some of them, indeed, he could not read, for they were in the dialects of Northern India, and no interpreter was employed. He administered the oath to the deponents with all possible expedition, and asked not a single question, not even whether they had perused the statements to which they swore. This work performed, he got again into his palanquin and posted back to

Calcutta,  
which, b  
Under th  
crimes co  
Court of  
right to t  
object, th  
that he r  
regular m  
hired him  
not sift,  
properly  
functiona  
The tim  
that robe  
as by him  
the atten  
American  
In one  
president  
of Scotla  
have tak  
committe  
esting an  
There  
the great  
Indian a  
possible,  
might, w  
fore, whi  
were pas  
justice.  
Hastings  
motion o  
General  
dishonou  
jurisdicti  
made wi  
an addre  
summon  
Impey

Calcutta, to be in time for the opening of term. The cause was one which, by his own confession, lay altogether out of his jurisdiction. Under the charter of justice, he had no more right to inquire into the crimes committed by Asiatics in Oude than the Lord President of the Court of Session of Scotland to hold an assize at Exeter. He had no right to try the Begums, nor did he pretend to try them. With what object, then, did he undertake so long a journey? Evidently in order that he might give, in an irregular manner, that sanction which in a regular manner he could not give to the crimes of those who had recently hired him; and in order that a confused mass of testimony which he did not sift, which he did not even read, might acquire an authority not properly belonging to it, from the signature of the highest judicial functionary in India.

The time was approaching, however, when he was to be stripped of that robe which has never, since the Revolution, been disgraced so foully as by him. The state of India had for sometime occupied much of the attention of the British Parliament. Towards the close of the American war, two committees of the Commons sat on Eastern affairs. In one Edmund Burke took the lead. The other was under the presidency of the able and versatile Henry Dundas, then Lord Advocate of Scotland. Great as are the changes which, during the last sixty years, have taken place in our Asiatic dominions, the reports which those committees laid on the table of the House will still be found most interesting and instructive.

There was as yet no connection between the Company and either of the great parties of the State. The ministers had no motive to defend Indian abuses. On the contrary, it was for their interest to show, if possible, that the government and patronage of our Oriental empire might, with advantage, be transferred to themselves. The votes, therefore, which, in consequence of the reports made by the two committees, were passed by the Commons, breathed the spirit of stern and indignant justice. The severest epithets were applied to several of the measures of Hastings, especially to the Rohilla war; and it was resolved, on the motion of Mr. Dundas, that the Company ought to recall a Governor-General who had brought such calamities on the Indian people, and such dishonour on the British name. An Act was passed for limiting the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court. The bargain which Hastings had made with the Chief Justice was condemned in the strongest terms, and an address was presented to the King, praying that Impey might be summoned home to answer for his misdeeds.

Impey was recalled by a letter from the Secretary of State. But the

proprietors of India stock resolutely refused to dismiss Hastings from their service; and passed a resolution affirming, what was undeniably true, that they were entrusted by law with the right of naming and removing their Governor-General and that they were not bound to obey the directions of a single branch of the legislature with respect to such nomination or removal.

Thus supported by his employers, Hastings remained at the head of the Government of Bengal till the spring of 1785. His administration, so eventful and stormy, closed in almost perfect quiet. In the Council there was no regular opposition to his measures. Peace was restored to India. The Mahratta war had ceased. Hyder was no more. A treaty had been concluded with his son, Tippoo; and the Carnatic had been evacuated by the armies of Mysore. Since the termination of the American war, England had no European enemy or rival in the Eastern seas.

## CHAPTER XXI.

### REVIEW OF HASTINGS' ADMINISTRATION.

On a general review of the long administration of Hastings, it is impossible to deny that, against the great crimes by which it is blemished, we have to set off great public services. England had passed through a perilous crisis. She still, indeed, maintained her place in the foremost rank of European powers: and the manner in which she had defended herself against fearful odds had inspired surrounding nations with a high opinion both of her spirit and of her strength. Nevertheless, in every part of the world, except one, she had been a loser. Not only had she been compelled to acknowledge the independence of thirteen colonies peopled by her children, and to conciliate the Irish by giving up the right of legislating for them; but in the Mediterranean, in the Gulf of Mexico, on the coast of Africa, on the continent of America, she had been compelled to cede the fruits of her victories in former wars. Spain regained Minorca and Florida; France regained Senegal, Goree, and several West Indian Islands. The only quarter of the world in which Britain had lost nothing was the quarter in which her interests had been committed to the care of Hastings. In spite of the utmost exertions of European and Asiatic enemies, the power of our country in the East had been greatly augmented. Benares was subjected; the Nabob Vizier reduced to vassalage. That our influence had been thus extended, nay, that Fort William and Fort St. George had not been occupied by hostile armies

was owing  
the skill a

His inter  
be consider  
solved the  
to English  
and imper  
pensed, re  
inferior in  
Emperor  
that every  
Bengal, w  
improven  
improven  
But whoe  
ning the  
allow tha  
pare the  
unjust a  
Robinson  
his ploug  
his flails,  
The ju  
was not  
house; a  
a comm  
Nor n  
the head  
owed as  
in Euro  
function  
of offici  
his own  
Somers  
to teach  
ments;  
of the  
It m  
was co  
down b  
formid

was owing, if we may trust the general voice of the English in India, to the skill and resolution of Hastings.

His internal administration, with all its blemishes, gives him a title to be considered as one of the most remarkable men in our history. He dissolved the double government. He transferred the direction of affairs to English hands. Out of a frightful anarchy he educed at least a rude and imperfect order. The whole organization by which justice was dispensed, revenue collected, peace maintained throughout a territory not inferior in population to the dominions of Lewis the Sixteenth or the Emperor Joseph, was formed and superintended by him. He boasted that every public office, without exception, which existed when he left Bengal, was his creation. It is quite true that this system, after all the improvements suggested by the experience of sixty years, still needs improvement, and that it was at first far more defective than it now is. But whoever seriously considers what it is to construct from the beginning the whole of a machine so vast and complex as a government, will allow that what Hastings effected deserves high admiration. To compare the most celebrated European ministers to him seems to us as unjust as it would be to compare the best baker in London with Robinson Crusoe, who, before he could bake a single loaf, had to make his plough and his harrow, his fences and his scarecrows, his sickle and his flails, his mill and his oven.

The just fame of Hastings rises still higher when we reflect that he was not bred a statesman; that he was sent from school to a counting-house; and that he was employed during the prime of his manhood as a commercial agent, far from all intellectual society.

Nor must we forget that all, or almost all, to whom, when placed at the head of affairs, he could apply for assistance, were persons who owed as little as himself, or less than himself, to education. A minister in Europe finds himself, on the first day on which he commences his functions, surrounded by experienced public servants, the depositaries of official traditions. Hastings had no such help. His own reflection, his own energy, were to supply the place of all Downing Street and Somerset House. Having had no facilities for learning, he was forced to teach. He had first to form himself, and then to form his instruments; and this not in a single department, but in all the departments of the administration.

It must be added, that while engaged in this most arduous task, he was constantly trammelled by orders from home, and frequently borne down by a majority in Council. The preservation of an empire from a formidable combination of foreign enemies, the construction of a

government in all its parts, were accomplished by him, while every ship brought out bales of censure from his employers, and while the records of every consultation were filled with acrimonious minutes by his colleagues. We believe that there never was a public man whose temper was so severely tried; not Marlborough, when thwarted by the Dutch Deputies; not Wellington, when he had to deal at once with the Portuguese Regency, the Spanish Juntas, and Mr. Percival. But the temper of Hastings was equal to almost any trial. It was not sweet; but it was calm. Quick and vigorous as his intellect was, the patience with which he endured the most cruel vexations till a remedy could be found resembled the patience of stupidity. He seems to have been capable of resentment, bitter and long enduring; yet his resentment so seldom hurried him into any blunder that it may be doubted whether what appeared to be revenge was anything but policy.

The effect of this singular equanimity was that he always had the full command of all the resources of one of the most fertile minds that ever existed. Accordingly no complication of perils and embarrassments could perplex him. For every difficulty he had a contrivance ready; and, whatever may be thought of the justice and humanity of some of his contrivances, it is certain that they seldom failed to serve the purpose for which they were designed.

Together with this extraordinary talent for devising expedients, Hastings possessed, in a very high degree, another talent scarcely less necessary to a man in his situation; we mean the talent for conducting political controversy. It is as necessary to an English statesman in the East that he should be able to write, as it is to a minister in this country that he should be able to speak. It is chiefly by the oratory of a public man here that the nation judges of his powers. It is from the letters and reports of a public man in India that the dispensers of patronage form their estimate of him. In each case, the talent which receives peculiar encouragement is developed, perhaps at the expense of the other powers. In this country we sometimes hear men speak above their abilities. It is not very unusual to find gentlemen in the Indian service who write above their abilities. The English politician is a little too much of a debater; the Indian politician a little too much of an essayist.

Of the numerous servants of the Company who have distinguished themselves as framers of minutes and despatches, Hastings stands at the head. He was indeed the person who gave to the official writing of the Indian governments the character which it still retains. He was matched against no common antagonist: But even Francis was forced

to acknow  
contending  
General's  
venient th  
point of v  
style must  
pure, and  
on one o  
Hastings

And, si  
unjust no  
gave to li  
tended wi  
cations.  
learning o  
with Milt  
and surge  
or for the  
exposition  
tration o  
high com  
empire, o  
as himsel  
society, g  
pulse to l  
With the  
brought  
much to  
Society o  
selected  
he declin  
advantag  
patronag  
looked v  
mysterie  
religion  
knew of  
in appr  
wisdom  
ruler w  
India, a  
of the

to acknowledge, with sullen and resentful candour, that there was no contending against the pen of Hastings. And, in truth, the Governor-General's power of making out a case, of perplexing what it was inconvenient that people should understand, and of setting in the clearest point of view whatever would bear the light, was incomparable. His style must be praised with some reservation. It was in general forcible, pure, and polished; but it was sometimes, though not often, turgid, and on one or two occasions even bombastic. Perhaps the fondness of Hastings for Persian literature may have tended to corrupt his taste.

And, since we have referred to his literary tastes, it would be most unjust not to praise the judicious encouragement which, as a ruler he gave to liberal studies and curious researches. His patronage was extended with prudent generosity, to voyages, travels, experiments, publications. He did little, it is true, towards introducing into India the learning of the West. To make the young natives of Bengal familiar with Milton and Adam Smith, to substitute the geography, astronomy, and surgery of Europe for the dotages of the Brahminical superstition, or for the imperfect science of ancient Greece, transfused through Arabian expositions, this was a scheme reserved to crown the beneficent administration of a far more virtuous ruler. Still, it is impossible to refuse high commendation to a man who, taken from a ledger to govern an empire, overwhelmed by public business, surrounded by people as busy as himself, and separated by thousands of leagues from almost all literary society, gave, both by his example and by his munificence, a great impulse to learning. In Persian and Arabic literature he was deeply skilled. With the Sanscrit he was not himself acquainted; but those who first brought that language to the knowledge of European students owed much to his encouragement. It was under his protection that the Asiatic Society commenced its honourable career. That distinguished body selected him to be its first president, but, with excellent taste and feeling, he declined the honour in favour of Sir William Jones. But the chief advantage which the student of Oriental letters derived from his patronage remains to be mentioned. The Pundits of Bengal had always looked with great jealousy on the attempts of foreigners to pry into those mysteries which were locked up in the sacred dialect. The Brahminical religion had been persecuted by the Mahomedans. What the Hindoos knew of the spirit of the Portuguese Government might warrant them in apprehending persecution from Christians. That apprehension the wisdom and moderation of Hastings removed. He was the first foreign ruler who succeeded in gaining the confidence of the hereditary priests of India, and who induced them to lay open to English scholars the secrets of the old Brahminical theology and jurisprudence.

## CHAPTER XXII.

## HASTINGS'S POPULARITY IN BENGAL.

It is, indeed, impossible to deny that in the great art of inspiring large masses of human beings with confidence and attachment, no ruler ever surpassed Hastings. If he had made himself popular with the English by giving up the Bengalees to extortion and oppression, or if, on the other hand, he had conciliated the Bengalees and alienated the English, there would have been no cause for wonder. What is peculiar to him is that, being the chief of a small band of strangers, who exercised boundless power over a great indigenous population, he made himself beloved both by the subject many and the dominant few. The affection felt for him by the civil service was singularly ardent and constant. Through all his disasters and perils, his brethren stood by him with steadfast loyalty. The army, at the same time, loved him as armies have seldom loved any but the greatest chiefs who have led them to victory. Even in his disputes with distinguished military men, he could always count on the support of the military profession. While such was his empire over the hearts of his countrymen, he enjoyed among the natives a popularity such as other Governors have perhaps better merited, but such as no other Governor has been able to attain. He spoke their vernacular dialects with facility and precision. He was intimately acquainted with their feelings and usages. On one or two occasions, for great ends, he deliberately acted in defiance of their opinion; but on such occasions he gained more in their respect than he lost in their love. In general, he carefully avoided all that could shock their national or religious prejudices. His administration was, indeed, in many respects faulty; but the Bengalee standard of good government was not high. Under the Nabobs, the hurricane of Mahratta cavalry had passed annually over the rich alluvial plain. But even the Mahratta shrank from a conflict with the mighty children of the sea; and the immense rice harvests of the Lower Ganges were safely gathered in under the protection of the English sword. The first English conquerors had been more rapacious and merciless even than the Mahrattas; but that generation had passed away. Defective as was the police, heavy as were the public burdens, it is probable that the oldest man in Bengal could not recollect a season of equal security and prosperity. For the first time within living memory the province was placed under a government strong enough to prevent others from robbing, and not inclined to play the robber itself. These things inspired good-will. At the same time, the constant success

of Hast  
difficult  
than re  
have m  
more th  
of the  
about t  
Hoste

The  
popular  
against  
perceiv  
sure m  
motive  
which  
regulat  
the pli  
to the  
to the  
with r  
sense o  
will al  
inordin  
selfish  
titled.  
war, t  
Oude,  
pecuni  
the fa  
civil se  
tempt  
to pra  
rigidly  
indelic  
as cor  
would  
Europ  
any e  
zemin  
in the  
might

of Hastings, and the manner in which he extricated himself from every difficulty, made him an object of superstitious admiration; and the more than regal splendour which he sometimes displayed dazzled a people who have much in common with children. Even now, after the lapse of more than fifty years, natives of India still talk of him as the greatest of the English; and nurses sing children to sleep with a jingling ballad about the fleet horses and richly caparisoned elephants of Sahib Warren Hostein.

The gravest offence of which Hastings was guilty did not affect his popularity with the people of Bengal; for those offences were committed against neighbouring states. Those offences, as our readers must have perceived, we are not disposed to vindicate; yet, in order that the censure may be justly apportioned to the transgression, it is fit that the motive of the criminal should be taken into consideration. The motive which prompted the worst acts of Hastings was misdirected and ill-regulated public spirit. The rules of justice, the sentiments of humanity, the plighted faith of treaties, were in his view as nothing, when opposed to the immediate interest of the State. This is no justification, according to the principles either of morality, or of what we believe to be identical with morality, namely, far-sighted policy. Nevertheless, the common sense of mankind, which in questions of this sort seldom goes far wrong, will always recognize a distinction between crimes which originate in an inordinate zeal for the commonwealth, and crimes which originate in selfish cupidity. To the benefit of this distinction Hastings is fairly entitled. There is, we conceive, no reason to suspect that the Rohilla war, the revolution of Benares, or the spoliation of the Princesses of Oude, added a rupee to his fortune. We will not affirm that, in all pecuniary dealings, he showed that punctilious integrity, that dread of the faintest appearance of evil, which is now the glory of the Indian civil service. But when the school in which he had been trained, and the temptations to which he was exposed are considered, we are more inclined to praise him for his general uprightness with respect to money, than rigidly to blame him for a few transactions which would now be called indelicate and irregular, but which even now would hardly be designated as corrupt. A rapacious man he certainly was not. Had he been so, he would infallibly have returned to his country the richest subject in Europe. We speak within compass when we say that, without applying any extraordinary pressure, he might easily have obtained from the zemindars of the Company's provinces and from neighbouring princes, in the course of thirteen years, more than three million sterling, and might have outshone the splendour of Carlton House and of the *Palais*

*Royal.* He brought home a fortune such as a Governor-General, fond of state and careless of thrift, might easily, during so long a tenure of office, save out of his legal salary. Mrs. Hastings, we are afraid, was less scrupulous. It was generally believed that she accepted presents with great alacrity, and that she thus formed, without the connivance of her husband, a private hoard amounting to several lacs of rupees. We are the more inclined to give credit to this story because Mr. Gleig, who cannot but have heard it, does not, as far as we have observed, notice or contradict it.

The influence of Mrs. Hastings over her husband was indeed such that she might easily have obtained much larger sums than she was ever accused of receiving. At length her health began to give way ; and the Governor-General, much against his will, was compelled to send her to England. He seems to have loved her with that love which is peculiar to men of strong minds, to men whose affection is not easily won or widely diffused. The talk of Calcutta ran for some time on the luxurious manner in which he fitted up the roundhouse of an Indiaman for her accommodation, on the profusion of sandal-wood and carved ivory which adorned her cabin, and on the thousands of rupees which had been expended in order to procure for her the society of an agreeable female companion during the voyage. We may remark here that the letters of Hastings to his wife are exceedingly characteristic. They are tender, and full of indications of esteem and confidence ; but, at the same time, a little more ceremonious than is usual in so intimate a relation. The solemn courtesy with which he compliments "his elegant Marian" reminds us now and then of the dignified air with which Sir Charles Grandison bowed over Miss Byron's hand in the cedar parlour.

After some months Hastings prepared to follow his wife to England. When it was announced that he was about to quit his office, the feeling of the society which he had so long governed manifested itself by many signs. Addresses poured in from Europeans and Asiatics, from civil functionaries, soldiers, and traders. On the day on which he delivered up the keys of office, a crowd of friends and admirers formed a lane to the quay where he embarked. Several barges escorted him far down the river, and some attached friends refused to quit him till the low coast of Bengal was fading from the view, and till the pilot was leaving the ship.

---

Of  
books  
beguil  
of Ho  
Shore  
and h  
excell  
friend  
need.  
The  
more  
moult  
Leade  
He  
with  
censu  
of he  
gracie  
and th  
witho  
letter  
find  
appar  
of my  
The  
is the  
the at  
at Ply  
seriou  
howe  
exten  
Ha  
Indee  
pedie  
forsal  
was  
Nunc

## CHAPTER XXIII.

## TAKES FINAL LEAVE OF INDIA.

Of his voyage little is known, except that he amused himself with books and with his pen; and that among the compositions by which he beguiled the tediousness of that long leisure, was a pleasing imitation of Horace's *Otium Divos rogat*. This little poem was inscribed to Mr. Shore, afterwards Lord Teignmouth, a man of whose integrity, humanity and honour it is impossible to speak too highly, but who, like some other excellent members of the civil service, extended to the conduct of his friend Hastings an indulgence of which his own conduct never stood in need.

The voyage was, for those times, very speedy. Hastings was little more than four months on the sea. In June, 1785, he landed at Plymouth, posted to London, appeared at Court, paid his respects in Leadenhall Street, and then retired with his wife to Cheltenham.

He was greatly pleased with his reception. The King treated him with a marked distinction. The Queen, who had already incurred much censure on account of the favour which, in spite of the ordinary-severity of her virtue, she had shown to the "elegant Marian," was not less gracious to Hastings. The Directors received him in a solemn sitting, and their chairman read to him a vote of thanks, which they had passed without one dissentient voice. "I find myself," said Hastings, in a letter written about a quarter of a year after his arrival in England, "I find myself everywhere, and universally, treated with evidences, apparent even to my own observation, that I possess the good opinion of my country."

The confident and exulting tone of his correspondence about this time is the more remarkable because he had already received ample notice of the attack which was in preparation. Within a week after he landed at Plymouth, Burke gave notice in the House of Commons of a motion seriously affecting a gentleman lately returned from India. The session, however, was then so far advanced that it was impossible to enter on so extensive and important a subject.

Hastings, it is clear, was not sensible of the danger of his position. Indeed, that sagacity, that judgment, that readiness in devising expedients, which had distinguished him in the East, seemed now to have forsaken him; not that his abilities were at all impaired; not that he was not still the same man who had triumphed over Francis and Nuncomar; who had made the Chief Justice and the Nabob Vizier his

tools ; who had deposed Cheyte Sing ; and repelled Hyder Ali. But an oak, as Mr. Grattan finely said, should not be transplanted at fifty. A man who, having left England when a boy, returns to it after thirty or forty years passed in India, will find, be his talents what they may, that he has much both to learn and to unlearn before he can take a place among English statesmen. The working of a representative system, the war of parties, the arts of debate, the influence of the press, are startling novelties to him. Surrounded on every side by new machines and new tactics, he is as much bewildered as Hannibal would have been at Waterloo, or Themistocles at Trafalgar. His very acuteness deludes him. His very vigour causes him to stumble. The more correct his maxims, when applied to the state of society to which he is accustomed, the more certain they are to lead him astray. This was strikingly the case with Hastings. In India he had a bad hand ; but he was master of the game, and he won every stake. In England he held excellent cards, if he had known how to play them ; and it was chiefly by his own errors that he was brought to the verge of ruin.

Of all his errors, the most serious was perhaps the choice of a champion. Clive, in similar circumstances, had made a singularly happy selection. He put himself into the hands of Wedderburn, afterwards Lord Loughborough, one of the few great advocates who have also been great in the House of Commons. To the defence of Clive, therefore, nothing was wanting, neither learning nor knowledge of the world, neither forensic acuteness nor that eloquence which charms political assemblies. Hastings entrusted his interests to a very different person, a major in the Bengal army, named Scott. This gentleman had been sent over from India some time before as the agent of the Governor-General. It was rumoured that his services were rewarded with Oriental munificence ; and we believe that he received much more than Hastings could conveniently spare. The Major obtained a seat in Parliament, and was there regarded as the organ of his employer. It was evidently impossible that a gentleman so situated could speak with the authority which belongs to an independent position. Nor had the agent of Hastings the talents necessary for obtaining the ear of an assembly which, accustomed to listen to great orators, had naturally become fastidious. He was always on his legs ; he was very tedious, and he had only one topic, the merits and wrongs of Hastings. Everybody who knows the House of Commons will easily guess what followed. The Major was soon considered as the greatest bore of his time. His exertions were not confined to Parliament. There was hardly a day on which the newspapers did not contain some puff upon Hastings, signed *Asiaticus*

or Ben  
hardly  
and fro  
pastry  
questio  
that w  
will gi  
the gre

In s  
affairs  
Compa  
he had  
lived  
Lansd  
import  
minist  
Gener  
again  
accuse  
to the  
of Ha  
extra  
them  
exten  
viol  
Lord  
intelle  
Mr. P  
Pitt,  
studie  
Indian  
in pri  
higher  
grant  
resolu  
Comm  
reacin  
appro  
Mr. F  
advise  
Gener

or *Bengalensis*, but known to be written by the indefatigable Scott; and hardly a month in which some bulky pamphlet on the same subject, and from the same pen, did not pass to the trunkmakers and the pastrycooks. As to this gentleman's capacity for conducting a delicate question through Parliament, our readers will want no evidence beyond that which they will find in letters preserved in these volumes. We will give a single specimen of his temper and judgment. He designated the greatest man then living as "that reptile, Mr. Burke."

In spite, however, of this unfortunate choice, the general aspect of affairs was favourable to Hastings. The King was on his side. The Company and its servants were zealous in his cause. Among public men he had many ardent friends. Such were Lord Mansfield, who had outlived the vigour of his body, but not that of his mind; and Lord Lansdowne, who, though unconnected with any party, retained the importance which belongs to great talents and knowledge. The ministers were generally believed to be favourable to the late Governor-General. They owed their power to the clamour which had been raised against Mr. Fox's East India Bill. The authors of that bill, when accused of invading vested rights, and of setting up powers unknown to the constitution, had defended themselves by pointing to the crimes of Hastings, and by arguing that abuses so extraordinary justified extraordinary measures. Those who, by opposing that bill, had raised themselves to the head of affairs, would naturally be inclined to extenuate the evils which had been made the plea for administering so violent a remedy; and such, in fact, was their general disposition. The Lord Chancellor Thurlow, in particular, whose great place and force of intellect gave him a weight in the government inferior only to that of Mr. Pitt, espoused the cause of Hastings with indecorous violence. Mr. Pitt, though he had censured many parts of the Indian system, had studiously abstained from saying a word against the late chief of the Indian Government. To Major Scott, indeed, the young minister had in private extolled Hastings as a great, a wonderful man, who had the highest claims on the Government. There was only one objection to granting all that so eminent a servant of the public could ask. The resolution of censure still remained on the journals of the House of Commons. That resolution was, indeed, unjust; but, till it was rescinded, could the minister advise the King to bestow any mark of approbation on the person censured? If Major Scott is to be trusted, Mr. Pitt declared that this was the only reason which prevented the advisers of the Crown from conferring a peerage on the late Governor-General. Mr. Dundas was the only important member of the adminis-

tration who was deeply committed to a different view on the subject. He had moved the resolution which created the difficulty; but even from him little was to be apprehended. Since he had presided over the committee on Eastern affairs, great changes had taken place. He was surrounded by new allies; he had fixed his hopes on new objects; and whatever may have been his good qualities—and he had many—flattery itself never reckoned rigid consistency in the number.

From the ministry, therefore, Hastings had every reason to expect support; and the ministry was very powerful. The Opposition was loud and vehement against him. But the Opposition, though formidable from the wealth and influence of some of its members, and from the admirable talents and eloquence of others, was outnumbered in Parliament and odious throughout the country. Nor, as far as we can judge, was the Opposition generally desirous to engage in so serious an undertaking as the impeachment of an Indian Governor. Such an impeachment must last for years. It must impose on the chiefs of the party an immense load of labour. Yet it could scarcely, in any manner, affect the event of the great political game. The followers of the Coalition were therefore more inclined to revile Hastings than to prosecute him. They lost no opportunity of coupling his name with the names of the most hateful tyrants of whom history makes mention. The wits of Brooks's aimed their keenest sarcasms both at his public and at his domestic life. Some fine diamonds which he had presented, as it was rumoured, to the royal family, and a certain richly-carved ivory bed which the Queen had done him the honour to accept from him, were favourite subjects of ridicule. One lively poet proposed that the great acts of the fair Marian's present husband should be immortalised by the pencil of his predecessor; and that Imhoff should be employed to embellish the House of Commons with paintings of the bleeding Rohillas, of Nuncomar swinging, of Cheyte Sing letting himself down to the Ganges. Another, in an exquisitely humorous parody of Virgil's third eclogue, propounded the question, what that mineral could be of which the rays had power to make the most austere of princesses the friend of a wanton. A third described, with gay malevolence, the gorgeous appearance of Mrs. Hastings at St. James's; the galaxy of jewels, torn from Indian Begums, which adorned her head-dress; her necklace gleaming with future votes; and the depending questions that shone upon her ears. Satirical attacks of this description, and perhaps a motion for a vote of censure, would have satisfied the great body of the Opposition. But there were two men whose indignation was not to be so appeased—Philip Francis and Edmund Burke.

Fran  
establis  
indeed,  
occasio  
greatest  
incurres  
much a  
years n  
brough  
malevo  
nurse o  
saical o  
The  
to unde  
discred  
on this  
he had  
the ad  
actuate  
fall of  
East In  
the rep  
ciently  
Hastin  
Burke  
had be  
togethe  
peace v  
from F  
crusade  
events  
undimi  
Hastin  
should  
which  
commi  
made t

## CHAPTER XXIV.

## THE PROSECUTION—TRIBUTE TO BURKE.

Francis had recently entered the House of Commons, and had already established a character there for industry and ability. He laboured, indeed, under one most unfortunate defect, want of fluency; but he occasionally expressed himself with a dignity and energy worthy of the greatest orators. Before he had been many days in Parliament he incurred the bitter dislike of Pitt, who constantly treated him with as much asperity as the laws of debate would allow. Neither lapse of years nor change of scene had mitigated the enmities which Francis had brought back from the East. After his usual fashion, he mistook his malevolence for virtue, nursed it, as preachers tell us that we ought to nurse our good dispositions, and paraded it on all occasions with Pharisaical ostentation.

The zeal of Burke was still fiercer, but it was far purer. Men unable to understand the elevation of his mind have tried to find out some discreditable motive for the vehemence and pertinacity which he shewed on this occasion; but they have altogether failed. The idle story that he had some private slight to revenge has long been given up, even by the advocates of Hastings. Mr. Gleig supposes that Burke was actuated by party spirit, that he retained a bitter remembrance of the fall of the Coalition, that he attributed that fall to the exertions of the East India interest, and that he considered Hastings as the head and the representative of that interest. This explanation seems to be sufficiently refuted by a reference to dates. The hostility of Burke to Hastings commenced long before the Coalition, and lasted long after Burke had become a strenuous supporter of those by whom the Coalition had been defeated. It began when Burke and Fox, closely allied together, were attacking the influence of the Crown, and calling for peace with the American Republic. It continued till Burke, alienated from Fox, and loaded with the favours of the Crown, died, preaching a crusade against the French Republic. We surely cannot attribute to the events of 1784 an enmity which began in 1781, and which retained undiminished force long after persons far more deeply implicated than Hastings in the events of 1784 had been cordially forgiven. And why should we look for any other explanation of Burke's conduct than that which we find on the surface? The plain truth is, that Hastings had committed some great crimes, and that the thought of those crimes made the blood of Burke boil in his veins. For Burke was a man in

whom compassion for suffering, and hatred of injustice and tyranny, were as strong as in Las Casas or Clarkson. And although in him, as in Las Casas or Clarkson, these noble feelings were alloyed with the infirmity which belongs to human nature, he is, like them, entitled to this great praise, that he devoted years of intense labour to the service of a people with whom he had neither blood nor language, neither religion nor manners in common, and from whom no requital, no thanks, no applause could be expected.

His knowledge of India was such as few even of those Europeans who have passed many years in that country have attained, and such as certainly was never attained by any public man who had not quitted Europe. He had studied the history, the laws, and the usages of the East with an industry such as is seldom found united to so much genius and so much sensibility. Others have perhaps been equally laborious, and have collected an equal mass of materials. But the manner in which Burke brought his higher powers of intellect to work on statements of facts and on tables of figures was peculiar to himself. In every part of those huge bales of Indian information which repelled almost all other readers, his mind, at once philosophical and poetical, found something to instruct or to delight. His reason analysed and digested those vast and shapeless masses ; his imagination animated and coloured them. Out of darkness, and dulness, and confusion, he formed a multitude of ingenious theories and vivid pictures. He had in the highest degree that noble faculty whereby man is able to live in the past and in the future, in the distant and in the unreal. India and its inhabitants were not to him, as to most Englishmen, mere names and abstractions, but a real country and a real people. The burning sun, the strange vegetation of the palm and the cocoa tree, the rice-field, the tank, the huge trees, older than the Mogul empire, under which the village crowds assemble, the thatched roof of the peasant's hut, the rich tracery of the mosque, where the imaum prays with his face to Mecca, the drums and banners and gaudy idols, the devotee swinging in the air, the graceful maiden, with the pitcher on her head, descending the steps to the river-side, the black faces, the long beards, the yellow streaks of sect, the turbans and the flowing robes, the spears and the silver maces, the elephants with their canopies of state, the gorgeous palanquin of the prince and the close litter of the noble lady ; all these things were to him as the objects amidst which his own life had been passed, as the objects which lay on the road between Beaconsfield and St. James's Street. All India was present to the eye of his mind, from the halls where suitors laid gold and perfumes at the feet of sovereigns, to the wild moor where the gipsy camp was pitched ; from

the bazaar, humming like a beehive with the crowd of buyers and sellers, to the jungle where the lonely courier shakes his bunch of iron rings to scare away the hyænas. He had just as lively an idea of the insurrection in Benares as of Lord George Gordon's riots, and of the execution of Nuncomar as of the execution of Dr. Dodd. Oppression in Bengal was to him the same thing as oppression in the streets of London.

He saw that Hastings had been guilty of some most unjustifiable acts. All that followed was natural and necessary in a mind like Burke's. His imagination and his passions, once excited, hurried him beyond the bounds of justice and good sense. His reason, powerful as it was, became the slave of feelings which it should have controlled. His indignation, virtuous in its origin, acquired too much of the character of personal aversion. He could see no mitigating circumstances, no redeeming merit. His temper, which, though generous and affectionate, had always been irritable, had now been made almost savage by bodily infirmities and mental vexations. Conscious of great powers and great virtues, he found himself, in age and poverty, a mark for the hatred of a perfidious court and a deluded people. In Parliament his eloquence was out of date. A young generation, which knew him not, had filled the House. Whenever he rose to speak, his voice was drowned by the unseemly interruption of lads who were in their cradles when his orations on the Stamp Act called forth the applause of the great Earl of Chatham. These things had produced on his proud and sensitive spirit an effect at which we cannot wonder. He could no longer discuss any question with calmness, or make allowance for honest differences of opinion. Those who think that he was more violent and acrimonious in debates about India than on other occasions are ill-informed respecting the last years of his life. In the discussions on the Commercial Treaty with the Court of Versailles, on the Regency, on the French Revolution, he showed even more virulence than in conducting the impeachment. Indeed, it may be remarked that the very persons who called him a mischievous maniac, for condemning in burning words the Rohilla war and the spoliation of the Begums, exalted him into a prophet as soon as he began to declaim, with greater vehemence, and not with greater reason, against the taking of the Bastille and the insults offered to Marie Antoinette. To us he appears to have been neither a maniac in the former case, nor a prophet in the latter, but in both cases a great and good man, led into extravagance by a sensibility which domineered over all his faculties.

---

## CHAPTER XXV.

## BURKE DEFEATED ON THE FIRST CHARGE.

It may be doubted whether the personal antipathy of Francis, or the noble indignation of Burke, would have led their party to adopt extreme measures against Hastings if his own conduct had been judicious. He should have felt that, great as his public services had been, he was not faultless, and should have been content to make his escape, without aspiring to the honours of a triumph. He and his agent took a different view. They were impatient for the rewards which, as they conceived, were deferred only till Burke's attacks should be over. They accordingly resolved to force on a decisive action with an enemy for whom, if they had been wise, they would have made a bridge of gold. On the first day of the session of 1786, Major Scott reminded Burke of the notice given in the preceding year, and asked whether it was seriously intended to bring any charge against the late Governor-General. This challenge left no course open to the Opposition, except to come forward as accusers, or to acknowledge themselves calumniators. The administration of Hastings had not been so blameless, nor was the great party of Fox and North so feeble, that it could be prudent to venture on so bold a defiance. The leaders of the Opposition instantly returned the only answer which they could with honour return; and the whole party was irrevocably pledged to a prosecution.

Burke began his operations by applying for papers. Some of the documents for which he asked were refused by the ministers, who, in their debate, held language such as strongly confirmed the prevailing opinion, that they intended to support Hastings. In April the charges were laid on the table. They had been drawn by Burke with great ability, though in a form too much resembling that of a pamphlet. Hastings was furnished with a copy of the accusation; and it was intimated to him, that he might, if he thought fit, be heard in his own defence at the bar of the Commons.

Here again Hastings was pursued by the same fatality which had attended him ever since the day when he set foot on English ground. It seemed to be decreed that this man, so politic and so successful in the East, should commit nothing but blunders in Europe. Any judicious adviser would have told him that the best thing which he could do would be to make an eloquent, forcible, and affecting oration at the bar of the House; but that, if he could not trust himself to speak, and found it necessary to read, he ought to be as concise as possible. Audiences

accustomed to extemporaneous debating of the highest excellence are always impatient of long written compositions. Hastings, however, sat down as he would have done at the Government House in Bengal, and prepared a paper of immense length. That paper, if recorded on the consultations of an Indian administration, would have been justly praised as a very able minute. But it was now out of place. It fell flat, as the best written defence must have fallen flat, on an assembly accustomed to the animated and strenuous conflicts of Pitt and Fox. The members, as soon as their curiosity about the face and demeanour of so eminent a stranger was satisfied, walked away to dinner, and left Hastings to tell his story till midnight to the clerks and the sergeant-at-arms.

All preliminary steps having been duly taken, Burke, in the beginning of June, brought forward the charge relating to the Rohilla war. He acted discreetly in placing this accusation in the van ; for Dundas had formerly moved, and the House had adopted, a resolution condemning, in the most severe terms, the policy followed by Hastings with regard to Rohilla. Dundas had little, or rather nothing, to say in defence of his own consistency ; but he put a bold face on the matter, and opposed the motion. Among other things, he declared that, though he still thought the Rohilla war unjustifiable, he considered the services which Hastings had subsequently rendered to the State as sufficient to atone even for so great an offence. Pitt did not speak, but voted with Dundas ; and Hastings was absolved by a hundred and nineteen votes against sixty-seven.

Hastings was now confident of victory. It seemed, indeed that he had reason to be so. The Rohilla war was, of all his measures, that which his accusers might with the greatest advantage assail. It had been condemned by the Court of Directors. It had been condemned by the House of Commons. It had been condemned by Mr. Dundas, who had since become the chief minister of the Crown for Indian affairs. Yet Burke, having chosen this strong ground, had been completely defeated on it. That, having failed here, he should succeed on any point, was generally thought impossible. It was rumoured at the clubs and coffee-houses that one or perhaps two more charges would be brought forward ; that if, on those charges, the sense of the House of Commons should be against impeachment, the Opposition would let the matter drop ; that Hastings would be immediately raised to the peerage, decorated with the star of the Bath, sworn of the Privy Council, and invited to lend the assistance of his talents and experience to the India Board. Lord Thurlow, indeed, some months before, had spoken with contempt of the scruples which prevented Pitt from calling Hastings to

the House of Lords, and had even said that, if the Chancellor of the Exchequer was afraid of the Commons, there was nothing to prevent the Keeper of the Great Seal from taking the royal pleasure about a patent of peerage. The very title was chosen. Hastings was to be Lord Daylesford. For, through all changes of scene and changes of fortune, remained unchanged his attachment to the spot which had witnessed the greatness and the fall of his family, and which had borne so great a part in the first dreams of his young ambition.

---

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### FOX, PITT AND SHERIDAN.

But in a very few days these fair prospects were overcast. On the thirteenth of June Mr. Fox brought forward, with great ability and eloquence, the charge respecting the treatment of Cheyte Sing. Francis followed on the same side. The friends of Hastings were in high spirits when Pitt rose. With his usual abundance and felicity of language, the Minister gave his opinion on the case. He maintained that the Governor-General was justified in calling on the Rajah of Benares for pecuniary assistance, and in imposing a fine when that assistance was contumaciously withheld. He also thought that the conduct of the Governor-General during the insurrection had been distinguished by ability and presence of mind. He censured, with great bitterness, the conduct of Francis, both in India and in Parliament, as most dishonest and malignant. The necessary inference from Pitt's arguments seemed to be that Hastings ought to be honourably acquitted, and both the friends and the opponents of the Minister expected from him a declaration to that effect. To the astonishment of all parties, he concluded by saying that, though he thought it right in Hastings to fine Cheyte Sing for contumacy, yet the amount of the fine was too great for the occasion. On this ground, and on this ground alone, did Mr. Pitt, applauding every other part of the conduct of Hastings with regard to Benares, declare that he should vote in favour of Mr. Fox's motion.

The House was thunderstruck, and it well might be so. For the wrong done to Cheyte Sing, even had it been as flagitious as Fox and Francis contended, was a trifle when compared with the horrors which had been inflicted on Rohilcund. But if Mr. Pitt's view of the case of Cheyte Sing were correct, there was no ground for an impeachment, or even for a vote of censure. If the offence of Hastings was really no more than this, that, having a right to impose a mulct, the amount of

which  
he had,  
too mu  
the hig  
years, r  
in what  
take an  
took.

the pre  
honour,  
the Rol  
though  
services

on both  
the mos  
the Ro  
Benares  
Mr. Pi  
that ch  
a tenth  
course  
He soft  
and the

Nor  
ministr  
this, th  
been at  
extraor  
vote tha  
then t  
conduct  
works  
efficacie  
him for

The g  
hours h  
received  
places a  
Hasting  
debate  
with his

which mulct was not defined, but was left to be settled by his discretion, he had, not for his own advantage, but for that of the State, demanded too much, was this an offence which required a criminal proceeding of the highest solemnity, a criminal proceeding to which, during sixty years, no public functionary had been subjected? We can see, we think, in what way a man of sense and integrity might have been induced to take any course respecting Hastings except the course which Mr. Pitt took. Such a man might have thought a great example necessary for the preventing of injustice and for the vindicating of the national honour, and might on that ground, have voted for impeachment both on the Rohilla charge and on the Benares charge. Such a man might have thought that the offence of Hastings had been atoned for by great services, and might, on that ground, have voted against the impeachment on both charges. With great diffidence we give it as our opinion that the most correct course would, on the whole, have been to impeach on the Rohilla charge and to acquit on the Benares charge. Had the Benares charge appeared to us in the same light in which it appeared to Mr. Pitt, we should, without hesitation, have voted for acquittal on that charge. The one course which it is inconceivable that any man of a tenth part of Mr. Pitt's abilities can have honestly taken was the course which he took. He acquitted Hastings on the Rohilla charge. He softened down the Benares charge till it became no charge at all; and then he pronounced that it contained matter for impeachment.

Nor must it be forgotten that the principal reason assigned by the ministry for not impeaching Hastings on account of the Rohilla war was this, that the delinquencies of the early part of his administration had been atoned for by the excellence of the later part. Was it not most extraordinary that men who had held this language could afterwards vote that the later part of his administration furnished matter for no less than twenty articles of impeachment? They first represented the conduct of Hastings in 1780 and 1781 as so highly meritorious that, like works of supererogation in the Catholic theology, it ought to be efficacious for the cancelling of former offences; and they then prosecuted him for his conduct in 1780 and 1781.

The general astonishment was the greater, because, only twenty-four hours before, the members on whom the Ministry could depend had received the usual notes from the Treasury, begging them to be in their places and to vote against Mr. Fox's motion. It was asserted by Mr. Hastings that, early on the morning of the very day on which the debate took place, Dundas called on Pitt, woke him, and was closeted with him many hours. The result of this conference was a determination

to give up the late Governor-General to the vengeance of the Opposition. It was impossible even for the most powerful Minister to carry all his followers with him in so strange a course. Several persons high in office, the Attorney-General, Mr. Grenville, and Lord Mulgrave, divided against Mr. Pitt. But the devoted adherents who stood by the head of the government without asking questions were sufficiently numerous to turn the scale. A hundred and nineteen members voted for Mr. Fox's motion; seventy-nine against it. Dundas silently followed Pitt.

That good and great man, the late William Wilberforce, often related the events of this remarkable night. He described the amazement of the House, and the bitter reflections which were muttered against the Prime Minister by some of the habitual supporters of the Government. Pitt himself appeared to feel that his conduct required some explanation. He left the treasury bench, sat for some time next to Mr. Wilberforce, and very earnestly declared that he had found it impossible, as a man of conscience, to stand any longer by Hastings. The business, he said, was too bad. Mr. Wilberforce, we are bound to add, fully believed that his friend was sincere, and that the suspicions to which this mysterious affair gave rise were altogether unfounded.

Those suspicions, indeed, were such as it is painful to mention. The friends of Hastings, most of whom, it is to be observed, generally supported the administration, affirmed that the motive of Pitt and Dundas was jealousy. Hastings was personally a favourite with the King. He was the idol of the East India Company and of its servants. If he were absolved by the Commons, seated among the Lords, admitted to the Board of Control, closely allied with the strong-minded and imperious Thurlow, was it not almost certain that he would soon draw to himself the entire management of Eastern affairs? Was it not possible that he might become a formidable rival in the Cabinet? It had probably got abroad that very singular communications had taken place between Thurlow and Major Scott, and that, if the First Lord of the Treasury was afraid to recommend Hastings for a peerage, the Chancellor was ready to take the responsibility of that step on himself. Of all ministers, Pitt was the least likely to submit with patience to such an encroachment on his functions. If the Commons impeached Hastings, all danger was at an end. The proceeding, however it might terminate, would probably last some years. In the meantime, the accused person would be excluded from honours and public employments, and could scarcely venture even to pay his duty at Court. Such were the motives attributed by a great part of the public to the young minister, whose ruling passion was generally believed to be avarice of power.

The p  
In the  
touchin  
Sherida  
said to  
ately b  
sion wh  
down,  
hands, i  
joined.  
could o  
spread  
was off  
would  
this rem  
whose d  
was dec  
the spe  
taste, s  
mentar  
within  
by the  
House  
great o  
Whe  
accused  
himself  
dred an  
The  
public  
relating  
discour  
ment w  
having  
the Lon  
misdem  
at-arms  
The  
impossi  
Hasting  
till the

the Opposition.  
 carry all his  
 sons high in  
 rave, divided  
 y the head of  
 numerous to  
 or Mr. Fox's  
 Pitt.

often related  
 amazement of  
 d against the  
 Government.  
 explanation.  
 Wilberforce,  
 as a man of  
 ess, he said,  
 ally believed  
 which this

ention. The  
 d, generally  
 of Pitt and  
 ite with the  
 its servants.  
 , admitted to  
 and imperious  
 w to himself  
 sible that he  
 probably got  
 ace between  
 the Treasury  
 ancillor was  
 all ministers,  
 an encroach-  
 gs, all danger  
 inate, would  
 person would  
 ould scarcely  
 es attributed  
 uling passion

The prorogation soon interrupted the discussions respecting Hastings. In the following year those discussions were resumed. The charge touching the spoliation of the Begums was brought forward by Sheridan in a speech which was so imperfectly reported that it may be said to be wholly lost, but which was, without doubt, the most elaborately brilliant of all the productions of his ingenious mind. The impression which it produced was such as has never been equalled. He sat down, not merely amidst cheering, but amidst the loud clapping of hands, in which the Lords below the bar and the strangers in the gallery joined. The excitement of the House was such that no other speaker could obtain a hearing; and the debate was adjourned. The ferment spread fast through the town. Within four and twenty hours Sheridan was offered a thousand pounds for the copyright of the speech if he would himself correct it for the press. The impression made by this remarkable display of eloquence on severe and experienced critics, whose discernment may be supposed to have been quickened by emulation, was deep and permanent. Mr. Windham, twenty years later, said that the speech deserved all its fame, and was, in spite of some faults of taste, such as were seldom wanting either in the literary or in the parliamentary performances of Sheridan, the finest that had been delivered within the memory of man. Mr. Fox, about the same time, being asked by the late Lord Holland what was the best speech ever made in the House of Commons, assigned the first place, without hesitation, to the great oration of Sheridan on the Oude charge.

When the debate was resumed, the tide ran so strongly against the accused that his friends were coughed and scraped down. Pitt declared himself for Sheridan's motion; and the question was carried by a hundred and seventy-five votes against sixty-eight.

The Opposition, flushed with victory, and strongly supported by the public sympathy, proceeded to bring forward a succession of charges relating chiefly to pecuniary transactions. The friends of Hastings were discouraged, and having now no hope of being able to avert an impeachment were not very strenuous in their exertions. At length the House, having agreed to twenty articles of charge, directed Burke to go before the Lords and to impeach the late Governor-General of high crimes and misdemeanours. Hastings was at the same time arrested by the sergeant-at-arms and carried to the bar of the Peers.

The session was now within ten days of its close. It was, therefore, impossible that any progress could be made in the trial till the next year. Hastings was admitted to bail; and further proceedings were postponed till the Houses should re-assemble.

When Parliament met in the following winter, the Commons proceeded to elect a committee for managing the impeachment. Burke stood at the head ; and with him were associated most of the leading members of the Opposition. But when the name of Francis was read, a fierce contention arose. It was said that Francis and Hastings were notoriously on bad terms, that they had been at feud during many years, that on one occasion their mutual aversion had impelled them to seek each others lives, and that it would be improper and indelicate to select a private enemy to be a public accuser. It was urged on the other side with great force, particularly by Mr. Windham, that impartiality, though the first duty of a judge, had never been reckoned among the qualities of an advocate ; that in the ordinary administration of criminal justice among the English, the aggrieved party, the very last person who ought to be admitted into the jury-box, is the prosecutor ; that what was wanted in a manager was, not that he should be free from bias, but that he should be able, well-informed, energetic, and active. The ability and information of Francis were admitted : and the very animosity with which he was reproached, whether a virtue or a vice, was at least a pledge for his energy and activity. It seems difficult to refute these arguments. But the inveterate hatred borne by Francis to Hastings had excited general disgust. The House decided that Francis should not be a manager. Pitt voted with the majority, Dundas with the minority

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

### THE TRIAL IN WESTMINSTER HALL.

In the meantime the preparations for the trial had proceeded rapidly, and on the thirteenth of February, 1788, the sittings of the Court commenced. There have been spectacles more dazzling to the eye, more gorgeous with jewellery and cloth of gold, more attractive to grown-up children, than that which was then exhibited at Westminster ; but perhaps there never was a spectacle so well calculated to strike a highly cultivated, a reflecting, an imaginative mind. All the various kinds of interest which belong to the near and to the distant, to the present and to the past, were collected on one spot and in one hour. All the talents and all the accomplishments which are developed by liberty and civilization were now displayed, with every advantage that could be derived both from co-operation and from contrast. Every step in the proceedings carried the mind either backward, through many troubled centuries, to the days when the foundations of our constitution were laid ;

or far  
under  
charact  
accordi  
an Eng  
city of

The  
Rufus,  
tion of  
Bacon  
of Stra  
flamed  
High C  
his fam  
were li  
The Pe  
under  
attende  
lords—  
—walk  
tribuna  
Heath  
against  
was clo  
great d  
came t  
bearing

were c  
emulat  
a great  
ness, v  
art. T  
of the  
comm  
countr  
majest  
tation  
of the  
when,  
thund  
side, t

commons present. Burke leading members read, a fierce were notoriously years, that to seek each to select a the other side ability, though the qualities criminal justice in who ought at what was as, but that the ability and animosity with as at least a refute these fastings had should not be ne minority

ded rapidly, Court come the eye, more to grown-up er; but per- like a highly ous kinds of present and l the talents and civiliza- be derived he proceed- d centuries, were laid;

or far away, over boundless seas and deserts, to dusky nations living under strange stars, worshipping strange gods, and writing strange characters from right to left. The High Court of Parliament was to sit, according to forms handed down from the days of the Plantagenets, on an Englishman accused of exercising tyranny over the lord of the holy city of Benares, and over the ladies of the princely house of Oude.

The place was worthy of such a trial. It was the great hall of William Rufus, the hall which had resounded with acclamations of the inauguration of thirty kings, the hall which had witnessed the just sentence of Bacon and the just absolution of Somers, the hall where the eloquence of Strafford had for a moment awed and melted a victorious party inflamed with just resentment, the hall where Charles had confronted the High Court of Justice with the placid courage which has half-redeemed his fame. Neither military nor civil pomp was wanting. The avenues were lined with grenadiers. The streets were kept clear by cavalry, The Peers, robed in gold and ermine, were marshalled by the heralds under Garter King-at-arms. The judges in their vestments of state attended to give advice on points of law. Near a hundred and seventy lords—three-fourths of the Upper House, as the Upper House then was—walked in solemn order from their usual place of assembling to the tribunal. The junior Baron present led the way. George Eliott, Lord Heathfield, recently ennobled for his memorable defence of Gibraltar against the fleets and armies of France and Spain. The long procession was closed by the Duke of Norfolk, Earl Marshal of the Realm, by the great dignitaries, and by the brothers and sons of the King. Last of all came the Prince of Wales, conspicuous by his fine person and noble bearing. The greyold walls were hung with scarlet. The long galleries were crowded by an audience such as has rarely excited the fears or the emulation of an orator. They were gathered together from all parts of a great, free, enlightened, and prosperous empire, grace and female loveliness, wit and learning, the representatives of every science and of every art. There were seated round the Queen the fair-haired young daughters of the house of Brunswick. There the ambassadors of great kings and commonwealths gazed with admiration on a spectacle which no other country in the world could present. There Siddons, in the prime of her majestic beauty, looked with emotion on a scene surpassing all the imitations of the stage. There the historian of the Roman Empire thought of the days when Cicero pleaded the cause of Sicily against Verres, and when, before a Senate which still retained some show of freedom, Tacitus thundered against the oppressor of Africa. There were seen, side by side, the greatest painter and the greatest scholar of the age. The spec-

tacle had allured Reynolds from that easel which has preserved to us the thoughtful foreheads of so many writers and statesmen, and the sweet smiles of so many noble matrons. It had induced Parr to suspend his labours in that dark and profound mine from which he had extracted a vast treasure of erudition, a treasure too often buried in the earth, too often paraded with injudicious and inelegant ostentation, but still precious, massive, and splendid. There appeared the voluptuous charms of her to whom the heir of the throne had in secret plighted his faith. There, too, was she, the beautiful mother of a beautiful race, the Saint Cecilia, whose delicate features, lighted up by love and music, art has rescued from the common decay. There were the members of that brilliant society which quoted, criticised, and exchanged repartees under the rich peacock hangings of Mrs. Montague. And there the ladies whose lips, more persuasive than those of Fox himself, had carried the Westminster election against palace and treasury, shone round Georgiana, Duchess of Devonshire.

The Sergeants made proclamation. Hastings advanced to the bar, and bent his knee. The culprit was indeed not unworthy of that great presence. He had ruled an extensive and populous country, had made laws and treaties, had sent forth armies, had set up and pulled down princes. And in his high place he had so borne himself, that all had feared him, that most had loved him, and that hatred itself could deny him no title to glory, except virtue. He looked like a great man, and not like a bad man. A person small and emaciated, yet deriving dignity from a carriage which, while it indicated deference to the court, indicated also habitual self-possession and self-respect, a high and intellectual forehead, a brow pensive but not gloomy, a mouth of inflexible decision, a face pale and worn, but serene, on which was written, as legibly as under the picture in the council chamber at Calcutta, *Mens æqua in arduis*; such was the aspect with which the great Proconsul presented himself to his judges.

His counsel accompanied him, men all of whom were afterwards raised by their talents and learning to the highest posts in their profession, the bold and strong-minded Law, afterwards Chief Justice of the King's Bench; the more humane and eloquent Dallas, afterwards Chief Justice of the Common Pleas; and Plomer, who, near twenty years later, successfully conducted in the same high court the defence of Lord Melville, and subsequently became Vice-Chancellor and Master of the Rolls.

But neither the culprit nor his advocates attracted so much notice as the accusers. In the midst of the blaze of red drapery, a space had been

fitted u  
gers, w  
of goss  
of his a  
of wea  
tors of  
eloque  
blindne  
and hi  
tact, a  
tinguis  
stood o  
togeth  
and S  
There  
his rea  
in amp  
every  
on Bur  
by eve  
the ing  
surrou  
an age  
conten  
a consy  
tion w  
his uni  
to be r  
of the  
stood a  
To the  
repres  
within  
sun sh  
mated  
of the

fitted up with green benches and tables for the Commons. The managers, with Burke at their head, appeared in full dress. The collectors of gossip did not fail to remark that even Fox, generally so regardless of his appearance, had paid to the illustrious tribunal the compliment of wearing a bag and sword. Pitt had refused to be one of the conductors of the impeachment; and his commanding, copious, and sonorous eloquence was wanting to that great muster of various talents. Age and blindness has unfitted Lord North to the duties of a public prosecutor; and his friends were left without the help of his excellent sense, his tact, and his urbanity. But, in spite of the absence of these two distinguished members of the Lower House, the box in which the managers stood contained an array of speakers such as perhaps had not appeared together since the great age of Athenian eloquence. There were Fox and Sheridan, the English Demosthenes and the English Hyperides. There was Burke, ignorant, indeed, or negligent of the art of adapting his reasonings and his style to the capacity and taste of his hearers, but in amplitude of comprehension and richness of imagination superior to every orator, ancient or modern. There, with eyes reverentially fixed on Burke, appeared the finest gentleman of the age, his form developed by every manly exercise, his face beaming with intelligence and spirit, the ingenuous, the chivalrous, the high-souled Windham. Nor, though surrounded by such men, did the youngest manager pass unnoticed. At an age when most of those who distinguish themselves in life are still contending for prizes and fellowships at college, he had won for himself a conspicuous place in Parliament. No advantage of fortune or connection was wanting that could set off to the height his splendid talents and his unblemished honour. At twenty-three he had been thought worthy to be ranked with the veteran statesmen who appeared as the delegates of the British Commons, at the bar of the British nobility. All who stood at that bar, save him alone, are gone, culprit, advocates, accusers. To the generation which is now in the vigour of life, he is the sole representative of a great age which has passed away. But those who within the last ten years, have listened with delight, till the morning sun shone on the tapestries of the House of Lords, to the lofty and animated eloquence of Charles Earl Grey, are able to form some estimate of the powers of a race of men among whom he was not the foremost

---

h notice as  
e had been

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

## BURKE'S IMPEACHMENT.

The charges and the answers of Hastings were first read. The ceremony occupied two whole days, and was rendered less tedious than it would otherwise have been by the silver voice and just emphasis of Cowper, the clerk of the court, a near relation of the amiable poet. On the third day Burke rose. Four sittings were occupied by his opening speech, which was intended to be a general introduction to all the charges. With an exuberance of thought and a splendour of diction which more than satisfied the highly raised expectation of the audience, he described the character and institutions of the natives of India, recounted the circumstances in which the Asiatic empire of Britain had originated, and set forth the constitution of the Company and of the English Presidencies. Having thus attempted to communicate to his hearers an idea of Eastern society, as vivid as that which existed in his own mind, he proceeded to arraign the administration of Hastings as systematically conducted in defiance of morality and public law. The energy and pathos of the great orator extorted expressions of unwonted admiration from the stern and hostile Chancellor, and, for a moment, seemed to pierce even the resolute heart of the defendant. The ladies in the galleries, unaccustomed to such displays of eloquence, excited by the solemnity of the occasion, and perhaps not unwilling to display their taste and sensibility, were in a state of uncontrollable emotion. Handkerchiefs were pulled out; smelling-bottles were handed round; hysterical sobs and screams were heard; and Mrs. Sheridan was carried out in a fit. At length the orator concluded. Raising his voice till the old arches of Irish oak resounded, "Therefore," said he, "hath it with all confidence been ordered, by the Commons of Great Britain, that I impeach Warren Hastings of high crimes and misdemeanours. I impeach him in the name of the Commons' House of Parliament, whose trust he has betrayed. I impeach him in the name of the English nation, whose ancient honour he has sullied. I impeach him in the name of the people of India, whose rights he has trodden under foot, and whose country he has turned into a desert. Lastly, in the name of human nature itself, in the name of both sexes, in the name of every age, in the name of every rank, I impeach the common enemy and oppressor of all!"

When the deep murmur of various emotions had subsided, Mr. Fox rose to address the Lords respecting the course of proceeding to be fol-

lowed.  
close th  
The wis  
open al  
before  
sider th  
Lough  
manage  
nal lea  
course

When  
charge  
papers  
the Pri  
trusted  
bunde  
days;  
It was  
dan, wh  
which h  
the arm  
admirat

June  
and the  
satisfac  
even th  
since H

The i  
began t  
relating  
fast.  
plays o  
entice n  
who ha  
There n  
statem  
with w  
dars an  
remain  
the bes  
counsel

lowed. The wish of the accusers was that the Court would bring to a close the investigation of the first charge before the second was opened. The wish of Hastings and of his counsel was that the managers should open all the charges, and produce all the evidence for the prosecution, before the defence began. The Lords retired to their own House to consider the question. The Chancellor took the side of Hastings. Lord Loughborough, who was now in opposition, supported the demand of the managers. The division showed which way the inclination of the tribunal leaned. A majority of near three to one decided in favour of the course for which Hastings contended.

When the Court sat again, Mr. Fox, assisted by Mr. Grey, opened the charge respecting Cheyte Sing, and several days were spent in reading papers and hearing witnesses. The next article was that relating to the Princesses of Oude. The conduct of this part of the case was entrusted to Sheridan. The curiosity of the public to hear him was unbounded. His sparkling and highly finished declamation lasted two days; but the hall was crowded to suffocation during the whole time. It was said that fifty guineas had been paid for a single ticket. Sheridan, when he concluded, contrived, with a knowledge of stage effect which his father might have envied, to sink back, as if exhausted, into the arms of Burke, who hugged him with the energy of generous admiration.

June was now far advanced. The session could not last much longer; and the progress which had been made in the impeachment was not very satisfactory. There were twenty charges. On two only of these had even the case for the prosecution been heard; and it was now a year since Hastings had been admitted to bail.

The interest taken by the public in the trial was great when the Court began to sit, and rose to the height when Sheridan spoke on the charge relating to the Begums. From that time the excitement went down fast. The spectacle had lost the attraction of novelty. The great displays of rhetoric were over. What was behind was not of a nature to entice men of letters from their books in the morning, or to tempt ladies who had left the masquerade at two to be out of bed before eight. There remained examinations and cross-examinations. There remained statements of accounts. There remained the reading of papers, filled with words unintelligible to English ears, with lacs and crores, zemindars and aumils, sunnuds and perwannahs, jahires and nuzzurs. There remained bickerings, not always carried on with the best taste or with the best temper, between the managers of the impeachment and the counsel for the defence, particularly between Mr. Burke and Mr. Law.

The cere-  
ous than it  
mphasis of  
poet. On  
y his open-  
to all the  
tion which  
ce, he des-  
recounted  
originated,  
lish Presi-  
ers an idea  
n mind, he  
tematically  
energy and  
admiration  
seemed to  
lies in the  
xcited by  
to display  
emotion.  
ed round;  
was carried  
voice till  
he, "hath  
at Britain,  
anours. I  
ent, whose  
ish nation,  
ame of the  
and whose  
of human  
age, in the  
oppressor of  
  
t, Mr. Fox  
g to be fol-

There remained the endless marches and countermarches of the Peers between their House and the Hall ; for as often as a point of law was to be discussed, their Lordships retired to discuss it apart, and the consequence was, as a Peer wittily said, that the judges walked and the trial stood still.

It is to be added that, in the spring of 1788, when the trial commenced, no important question, either of domestic or foreign policy, occupied the public mind. The proceeding in Westminster Hall, therefore, naturally attracted most of the attention of Parliament and of the country. It was the one great event of that season. But in the following year the King's illness, the debates on the Regency, the expectation of a change of ministry, completely diverted public attention from Indian affairs ; and within a fortnight after George the Third had returned thanks in St. Paul's for his recovery, the States-General of France met at Versailles. In the midst of the agitation produced by these events, the impeachment was for a time almost forgotten.

The trial in the Hall went on languidly. In the session of 1788, when the proceedings had the interest of novelty, and when the Peers had little other business before them, only thirty-five days were given to the impeachment. In 1789 the Regency Bill occupied the Upper House till the session was far advanced. When the King recovered, the circuits were beginning. The judges left town ; the Lords waited for the return of the oracles of jurisprudence ; and the consequence was that during the whole year only seventeen days were given to the case of Hastings. It was clear that the matter would be protracted to a length unprecedented in the annals of criminal law.

In truth, it is impossible to deny that impeachment, though it is a fine ceremony, and though it may have been useful in the seventeenth century, is not a proceeding from which much good can now be expected. Whatever confidence may be placed in the decision of the Peers on an appeal arising out of ordinary litigation, it is certain that no man has the least confidence in their impartiality when a great public functionary, charged with a great state crime, is brought to their bar. They are all politicians. There is hardly one among them whose vote on an impeachment may not be confidently predicted before a witness has been examined ; and, even if it were possible to rely on their justice, they would still be quite unfit to try such a cause as that of Hastings. They sit only during half the year. They have to transact much legislative and much judicial business. The law-lords whose advice is required to guide the unlearned majority, are employed daily in administering justice elsewhere. It is impossible, therefore, that during a busy session the

Upper  
expect  
to bring  
innocen  
constitu  
hours in  
less tha  
seven ye  
The re  
resolved  
received  
known,  
determi  
transact  
culprits  
But whe  
years be  
was, of  
his coun  
obtain a  
be plead

Severa  
to the tr  
some vi  
Nuncom  
was the  
country  
used dur  
friends.  
it hoped  
hurt. I  
mercy to  
the Hou  
mortific  
duty wh  
In the

Upper House should give more than a few days to an impeachment. To expect that their Lordships would give up partridge-shooting in order to bring the greatest delinquent to speedy justice, or to relieve accused innocence by speedy acquittal, would be unreasonable indeed. A well-constituted tribunal, sitting regularly six days in the week and nine hours in the day, would have brought the trial of Hastings to a close in less than three months. The Lords had not finished their work in seven years.

The result ceased to be matter of doubt from the time when the Lords resolved that they would be guided by the rules of evidence which are received in the inferior courts of the realm. Those rules, it is well known, exclude much information which would be quite sufficient to determine the conduct of any reasonable man in the most important transactions of private life. These rules at every assizes save scores of culprits whom judges, jury, and spectators firmly believe to be guilty. But when those rules were rigidly applied to offences committed many years before, at the distance of many thousands of miles, conviction was, of course, out of the question. We do not blame the accused and his counsel for availing themselves of every legal advantage in order to obtain an acquittal; but it is clear that an acquittal so obtained cannot be pleaded in bar of the judgment of history.

---

## CHAPTER XXIX.

### THE ACQUITTAL OF HASTINGS.

Several attempts were made by the friends of Hastings to put a stop to the trial. In 1789 they proposed a vote of censure upon Burke for some violent language which he had used respecting the death of Nuncomar and the connection between Hastings and Impey. Burke was then unpopular in the last degree both with the House and with the country. The asperity and indecency of some expressions which he had used during the debates on the Regency had annoyed even his warmest friends. The vote of censure was carried; and those who had moved it hoped that the managers would resign in disgust. Burke was deeply hurt. But his zeal for what he considered as the cause of justice and mercy triumphed over his personal feelings. He received the censure of the House with dignity and meekness, and declared that no personal mortification or humiliation should induce him to flinch from the sacred duty which he had undertaken.

In the following year the Parliament was dissolved; and the friends

of Hastings entertained a hope that the new House of Commons might not be disposed to go on with the impeachment. They began by maintaining that the whole proceeding was terminated by the dissolution. Defeated on this point, they made a direct motion that the impeachment should be dropped ; but they were defeated by the combined forces of the Government and the Opposition. It was, however, resolved that, for the sake of expedition, many of the articles should be withdrawn. In truth, had not some such measure been adopted, the trial would have lasted till the defendant was in his grave.

At length, in the spring of 1795, the decision was pronounced, near eight years after Hastings had been brought by the Sergeant-at-Arms of the Commons to the bar of the Lords. On the last day of this great procedure the public curiosity, long suspended, seemed to be revived. Anxiety about the judgment there could be none ; for it had been fully ascertained that there was a great majority for the defendant. Nevertheless many wished to see the pageant, and the Hall was as much crowded as on the first day. But those who, having been present on the first day, now bore a part in the proceedings of the last, were few, and most of those few were altered men.

As Hastings himself said, the arraignment had taken place before one generation, and the judgment was pronounced by another. The spectator could not look at the woolsack, or at the red benches of the Peers, or at the green benches of the Commons, without seeing something that reminded him of the instability of all human things, of the instability of power and fame and life, of the more lamentable instability of friendship. The Great Seal was borne before Lord Loughborough, who, when the trial commenced, was a fierce opponent of Mr. Pitt's government, and who was now a member of that government, while Thurlow, who presided in the court when it first sat, estranged from all his old allies, sat scowling among the junior Barons. Of about a hundred and sixty nobles who walked in the procession on the first day, sixty had been laid in their family vaults. Still more affecting must have been the sight of the managers' box. What had become of that fair fellowship, so closely bound together by public and private ties, so resplendent with every talent and accomplishment ? It had been scattered by calamities more bitter than the bitterness of death. The great chiefs were still living, and still in the full vigour of their genius. But their friendship was at an end. It had been violently and publicly dissolved, with tears and stormy reproaches. If those men, once so dear to each other, were now compelled to meet for the purpose of managing the impeachment, they met as strangers whom public business had brought together, and

behaved to each other with cold and distant civility. Burke had in his vortex whirled away Windham. Fox had been followed by Sheridan and Grey.

Only twenty-nine Peers voted. Of these only six found Hastings guilty on the charges relating to Cheyte Sing and to the Begums. On other charges, the majority in his favour was still greater. On some he was unanimously absolved. He was then called to the bar, was informed from the woolsack that the Lords had acquitted him, and was solemnly discharged. He bowed respectfully and retired.

We have said that the decision had been fully expected. It was also generally approved. At the commencement of the trial there had been a strong and indeed unreasonable feeling against Hastings. At the close of the trial there was a feeling equally strong and equally unreasonable in his favour. One cause of the change was, no doubt, what is commonly called the fickleness of the multitude, but what seems to us to be merely the general law of human nature. Both in individuals and in masses violent excitement is always followed by remission, and often by reaction. We are all inclined to depreciate whatever we have overpraised, and, on the other hand, to show undue indulgence where we have shown undue rigour. It was thus in the case of Hastings. The length of his trial, moreover, made him an object of compassion. It was thought, and not without reason, that, even if he was guilty, he was still an ill-used man, and that an impeachment of eight years was more than a sufficient punishment. It was also felt that, though, in the ordinary course of criminal law, a defendant is not allowed to set off his good actions against his crimes, a great political cause should be tried on different principles, and that a man who had governed an empire during thirteen years might have done some very reprehensible things, and yet might be on the whole deserving of rewards and honours rather than of fine and imprisonment. The press, an instrument neglected by the prosecutors, was used by Hastings and his friends with great effect. Every ship, too, that arrived from Madras or Bengal, brought a caddy-full of his admirers. Every gentleman from India spoke of the late Governor-General as having deserved better, and having been treated worse, than any man living. The effect of this testimony unanimously given by all persons who knew the East, was naturally very great. Retired members of the Indian services, civil and military, were settled in all corners of the kingdom. Each of them was, of course, in his own little circle, regarded as an oracle on an Indian question; and they were, with scarcely one exception, the zealous advocates of Hastings. It is to be added that, the numerous addresses to the late Governor-General, which his friends in Bengal

obtained from the natives and transmitted to England, made a considerable impression. To these addresses we attach little or no importance. That Hastings was beloved by the people whom he governed is true ; but the eulogies of pundits, zemindars, Mahomedan doctors, do not prove it to be true. For an English collector or judge would have found it easy to induce any native who could write to sign a panegyric on the most odious ruler that ever was in India. It was said that at Benares, the very place at which the acts set forth in the first article of impeachment had been committed, the natives had erected a temple to Hastings ; and this story excited a strong sensation in England. Burke's observations on the apotheosis were admirable. He saw no reason for astonishment, he said, in the incident which had been represented as so striking. He knew something of the mythology of the Brahmins. He knew that as they worshipped some gods from love, so they worshipped others from fear. He knew that they erected shrines, not only to the benignant deities of light and plenty, but also to the fiends who preside over smallpox and murder ; nor did he at all dispute the claim of Mr. Hastings to be admitted into such a Pantheon. This reply has always struck us as one of the finest that ever was made in Parliament. It is a grave and forcible argument, decorated by the most brilliant wit and fancy.

Hastings was, however, safe. But in everything except character, he would have been far better off if, when first impeached, he had at once pleaded guilty, and paid a fine of fifty thousand pounds. He was a ruined man. The legal expenses of his defence had been enormous. The expenses which did not appear in his attorney's bill were perhaps larger still. Great sums had been paid to Major Scott. Great sums had been laid out in bribing newspapers, rewarding pamphleteers, and circulating tracts. Burke, so early as 1790, declared in the House of Commons that twenty thousand pounds had been employed in corrupting the press. It is certain that no controversial weapon, from the gravest reasoning to the coarsest ribaldry, was left unemployed. Logan defended the accused Governor with great ability in prose. For the lovers of verse, the speeches of the managers were burlesqued in Simpkin's letters. It is now a fact, indisputable that Hastings stooped so low as to employ the aid of that malignant and filthy baboon John Williams, who called himself Anthony Pasquin. It was necessary to subsidise such scribes largely. The private hoards of Mrs. Hastings had disappeared. It is said that the banker to whom they had been entrusted had failed. Still if Hastings had practised strict economy, he would, after all his losses, have had a moderate competence ; but in the management of his

land, made a private affairs he was imprudent. The dearest wish of his heart had always been to regain Daylesford. At length, in the very year in which his trial commenced, the wish was accomplished; and the domain, alienated more than seventy years before, returned to the descendant of its old lords. But the manor house was a ruin; and the grounds round it had, during many years, been utterly neglected. Hastings proceeded to build, to plant, to form a sheet of water, to excavate a grotto; and, before he was dismissed from the bar of the House of Lords, he had expended more than forty thousand pounds in adorning his seat.

The general feeling both of the Directors and of the proprietors of the East India Company was that he had great claims on them, that his services to them had been eminent, and that his misfortunes had been the effect of his zeal for their interest. His friends in Leadenhall Street proposed to reimburse him the costs of his trial, and to settle on him an annuity of five thousand pounds a year. But the consent of the Board of Control was necessary; and at the head of the Board of Control was Mr. Dundas, who had himself been a party to the impeachment, who had, on that account, been reviled with great bitterness by the adherents of Hastings, and who, therefore, was not in a very complying mood. He refused to consent to what the Directors suggested. The Directors remonstrated. A long controversy followed. Hastings, in the meantime, was reduced to such distress that he could hardly pay his weekly bills. At length a compromise was made. An annuity for life of four thousand pounds was settled on Hastings; and in order to enable him to meet pressing demands, he was to receive ten years' annuity in advance. The Company was also permitted to lend him fifty thousand pounds, to be repaid by instalments without interest. This relief, though given in the most absurd manner, was sufficient to enable the retired Governor to live in comfort, and even in luxury, if he had been a skilful manager. But he was careless and profuse, and was more than once under the necessity of applying to the Company for assistance, which was liberally given.

He had security and affluence, but not the power and dignity which, when he landed from India, he had reason to expect. He had then looked forward to a coronet, a red riband, a seat at the Council Board, an office at Whitehall. He was then only fifty-two, and might hope for many years of bodily and mental vigour. The case was widely different when he left the bar of the Lords. He was now too old a man to turn his mind to a new class of studies and duties. He had no chance of receiving any mark of royal favour while Mr. Pitt remained in power; and, when Mr. Pitt retired, Hastings was approaching his seventieth year.

Once, and only once, after his acquittal, he interfered in politics ; and that interference was not much to his honour. In 1804 he exerted himself strenuously to prevent Mr. Addington, against whom Fox and Pitt had combined, from resigning the Treasury. It is difficult to believe that a man, so able and energetic as Hastings, can have thought that, when Bonaparte was at Boulogne with a great army, the defence of our island could safely be entrusted to a ministry which did not contain a single person whom flattery could describe as a great statesman. It is also certain that, on the important question which had raised Mr. Addington to power, and on which he differed from both Fox and Pitt, Hastings, as might have been expected, agreed with Fox and Pitt, and was decidedly opposed to Addington. Religious intolerance has never been the vice of the Indian service, and certainly was not the vice of Hastings. But Mr. Addington had treated him with marked favour. Fox had been a principal manager of the impeachment. To Pitt it was owing that there had been an impeachment ; and Hastings, we fear, was on this occasion guided by personal considerations, rather than by a regard to the public interest.

---

## CHAPTER XXX.

### IN RETIREMENT—DEATH.

The last twenty-four years of his life were chiefly spent at Daylesford. He amused himself with embellishing his grounds, riding fine Arab horses, fattening prize-cattle, and trying to rear Indian animals and vegetables in England. He sent for seeds of a very fine custard-apple, from the garden of what had once been his own villa, among the green hedgerows of Allipore. He tried also to naturalise in Worcestershire the delicious leechee, almost the only fruit of Bengal which deserves to be regretted even amidst the plenty of Covent Garden. The Mogul emperors, in the time of their greatness, had in vain attempted to introduce into Hindostan the goat of the table-land of Thibet, whose down supplies the looms of Cashmere with the materials of the finest shawls. Hastings tried, with no better fortune, to rear a breed at Daylesford ; nor does he seem to have succeeded better with the cattle of Bootan, whose tails are in high esteem as the best fans for brushing away the mosquitoes.

Literature divided his attention with his conservatories and his menagerie. He had always loved books, and they were now necessary to him. Though not a poet, in any high sense of the word, he wrote neat and polished lines with great facility, and was fond of exercising this

talent.  
Trissot  
the gre  
memoir  
copy of  
its app  
us to b  
table v  
was fel  
ourselv  
may ha  
matic f  
we sh  
earn o  
posed b  
this lit  
It is go  
and to  
are four  
last cen  
est affa  
blue-st  
Hastings  
Hayley  
Whe  
outlive  
object  
Compa  
place in  
of the C  
at that  
which  
had el  
nation  
The re  
tinguis  
history  
produc  
acclam  
rose an  
with th

talent. Indeed, if we must speak out, he seems to have been more of a Trissotin than was to be expected from the powers of his mind, and from the great part which he had played in life. We are assured in these memoirs that the first thing which he did in the morning was to write a copy of verses. When the family and guests assembled, the poem made its appearance as regularly as the eggs and rolls; and Mr. Gleig requires us to believe that, if from any accident Hastings came to the breakfast-table without one of his charming performances in his hand, the omission was felt by all as a grievous disappointment. Tastes differ widely. For ourselves, we must say that, however good the breakfasts at Daylesford may have been,—and we are assured that the tea was of the most aromatic flavour, and that neither tongue nor venison-pasty was wanting,—we should have thought the reckoning high if we had been forced to earn our repast by listening every day to a new madrigal or sonnet composed by our host. We are glad, however, that Mr. Gleig has preserved this little feature of character, though we think it by no means a beauty. It is good to be often reminded of the inconsistency of human nature, and to learn to look without wonder or disgust on the weaknesses which are found in the strongest minds. Dionysius in old times, Frederic in the last century, with capacity and vigour equal to the conduct of the greatest affairs, united all the little vanities and affectations of provincial blue-stockings. These great examples may console the admirers of Hastings for the affliction of seeing him reduced to the level of the Hayleys and Searwards.

When Hastings had passed many years in retirement, and had long outlived the common age of men, he again became for a short time an object of general attention. In 1813 the charter of the East India Company was renewed; and much discussion about Indian affairs took place in Parliament. It was determined to examine witnesses at the bar of the Commons; and Hastings was ordered to attend. He had appeared at that bar once before. It was when he read his answer to the charges which Burke had laid on the table. Since that time twenty-seven years had elapsed; public feeling had undergone a complete change; the nation had now forgotten his faults, and remembered only his services. The reappearance, too, of a man who had been among the most distinguished of a generation that had passed away, who now belonged to history, and who seemed to have risen from the dead, could not but produce a solemn and pathetic effect. The Commons received him with acclamations, ordered a chair to be set for him, and when he retired, rose and uncovered. There were, indeed, a few who did not sympathize with the general feeling. One or two of the managers of the impeach-

ment were present. They sate in the same seats which they had occupied when they had been thanked for the services which they had rendered in Westminster Hall; for, by the courtesy of the House, a member who has been thanked in his place is considered as having a right always to occupy that place. These gentlemen were not disposed to admit that they had employed several of the best years of their lives in persecuting an innocent man. They accordingly kept their seats, and pulled their hats over their brows; but the exceptions only made the prevailing enthusiasm more remarkable. The Lords received the old man with similar tokens of respect. The University of Oxford conferred on him the degree of Doctor of Laws; and, in the Sheldonian Theatre, the undergraduates welcomed him with tumultuous cheering.

These marks of public esteem were soon followed by marks of royal favour. Hastings was sworn of the Privy Council, and was admitted to a long private audience of the Prince Regent, who treated him very graciously. When the Emperor of Russia and the King of Prussia visited England, Hastings appeared in their train both at Oxford and in the Guildhall of London, and, though surrounded by a crowd of princes and great warriors, was everywhere received with marks of respect and admiration. He was presented by the Prince Regent both to Alexander and to Frederic William; and His Royal Highness went so far as to declare in public that honours far higher than a seat in the Privy Council were due, and would soon be paid, to the man who had saved the British dominions in Asia. Hastings now confidently expected a peerage; but, from some unexplained cause, he was again disappointed.

He lived about four years longer, in the enjoyment of good spirits, of faculties not impaired to any painful or degrading extent, and of health such as is rarely enjoyed by those who attain such an age. At length, on the twenty-second of August, 1818, in the eighty-sixth year of his age, he met death with the same tranquil and decorous fortitude which he had opposed to all the trials of his various and eventful life.

With all his faults—and they were neither few nor small—only one cemetery was worthy to contain his remains. In that temple of silence and reconciliation where the enmities of twenty generations lie buried, in the great Abbey which has during many ages afforded a quiet resting-place to those whose minds and bodies have been shattered by the contentions of the Great Hall, the dust of the illustrious accused should have mingled with the dust of the illustrious accusers. This was not to be. Yet the place of interment was not ill chosen. Behind the chancel of the parish church of Daylesford, in earth which already held the bones of many chiefs of the house of Hastings, was laid the coffin of

the  
nam  
War  
plou  
be ca  
had l  
the f  
and  
He h  
with  
with  
most  
of a  
years  
the f  
much  
Th  
pronc  
for th  
was  
some  
as a r  
the a  
for a  
honor  
noble  
by ei

the greatest man who has ever borne that ancient and widely extended name. On that very spot, probably, fourscore years before, the little Warren meanly clad and scantily fed, had played with the children of ploughmen. Even then his young mind had revolved plans which might be called romantic. Yet, however romantic, it is not likely that they had been so strange as the truth. Not only had the poor orphan retrieved the fallen fortunes of his line—not only had he repurchased the old lands and rebuilt the old dwelling—he had preserved and extended an empire. He had founded a polity. He had administered government and war with more than the capacity of Richelieu. He had patronized learning with the judicious liberality of Cosmo. He had been attacked by the most formidable combination of enemies that ever sought the destruction of a single victim; and over that combination, after a struggle of ten years, he had triumphed. He had at length gone down to his grave in the fulness of age, in peace, after so many troubles, in honour, after so much obloquy.

Those who look on his character without favour or malevolence will pronounce that, in the two great elements of all social virtue, in respect for the rights of others, and in sympathy for the sufferings of others, he was deficient. His principles were somewhat lax. His heart was somewhat hard. But though we cannot with truth describe him either as a righteous or as a merciful ruler, we cannot regard without admiration the amplitude and fertility of his intellect, his rare talents for command, for administration, and for controversy, his dauntless courage, his honourable poverty, his fervent zeal for the interests of the State, his noble equanimity, tried by both extremes of fortune, and never disturbed by either.

---

C  
me  
Col  
I  
C  
wh  
C  
fre  
lat  
F  
of I  
V  
148  
suc  
Ros  
T  
Her  
E  
had  
cen  
pos  
S  
Par  
I  
text  
E  
sym  
min  
V  
boy  
V  
pup  
C  
writ  
C  
L  
C  
S  
ball  
Buc  
E  
and,  
acts  
in 17  
fores  
Step  
Just

# NOTES.

## CHAPTER I.

**Our feeling . . . 1813**—Note in the illustration Macaulay's judicial attitude.

**Oliver Cromwell**—(1599-1658) a zealous Puritan and member of the Long Parliament (1640-1653), which he forcibly dissolved, and became Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of England. See Green's "Short History," Sect. Puritan England.

**Lely, Sir Peter**—a famous portrait painter of the 17th century.

**Curl-pated minions**—the foppish favourites of Charles I., who wore long curls, whilst the Roundheads—Cromwell's followers—wore their hair close-cropped.

**Great Danish sea-king**—Hastings, who, at the head of a number of Norse freebooters, invaded England in the time of King Alfred, but was defeated by the latter, and driven out of England in A.D. 896.

**Renowned Chamberlain**—The favourite minister and Lord High Chamberlain of Edward IV. He was beheaded by Richard III. in 1483.

**White Rose**—the floral emblem of the Yorkists in the prolonged contests (1455-1485) with the Lancastrians, whose emblem was the red rose. This struggle for the succession to the Crown of England is known in history as the "Civil Wars of the Roses."

**The Tudors**—(1485-1603) the ruling dynasty in England from the accession of Henry VII. to the death of Elizabeth.

**Earldom of Huntingdon**—a claimant for the Earldom of this house, which had been dormant for thirty years, came forward at the beginning of the present century, and, after proving his descent from an early branch of the family, gained possession of the title and estates.

**Speaker Lenthall**—Speaker of the House of Commons at the time of the "Long Parliament."

**Isis**—The Thames river above Oxford bears this name. The rivulet spoken of in the text is a tributary of the Thames. Daylesford is situate on this stream.

**But no cloud . . . to die**—Note this fine passage, and the essayist's manifest sympathy with young Hastings' ambition and the associations that filled the boy's mind.

**Westminster School**—founded by Queen Elizabeth for the education of forty boys, who are known as "Queen's Scholars."

**Vinny (Vincent) Bourne**—An English schoolmaster and fine Latin scholar. His pupil, Cowper, the poet, ranks him with Ovid. He died in 1747.

**Churchill, Charles**—(1731-64) author of *The Rosciad*, and other satirical writings.

**Coleman George** [the elder]—(1733-94) a translator and playwright.

**Lloyd, Robert**—(1733-64) poet and miscellaneous writer.

**Cumberland, Richard**—(1732-1811) a dramatist and essay writer.

**Shy and secluded poet**—Wm. Cowper (1731-1800), author of "The Task," the ballad of "John Gilpin," &c. He resided for a long time at Olney, on the Ouse, in Buckinghamshire.

**Elijah Impey, Sir**—afterwards Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Calcutta, and, according to the essayist, discredibly connected with Hastings in his arbitrary acts in India. For his many corrupt deeds he was recalled to England and impeached in 1783. Macaulay represents him as a vile tool of Hastings: note how the essayist foreshadows this by speaking of him here as a school-fag. Sir James Fitzjames Stephen, an eminent jurist, has since shown that Macaulay's portrait of the Chief Justice is exaggerated and untrue. This authority treats as calumnious the notion

that there was a corrupt compact between Impey and Hastings to get rid of Nuncomar in order to serve a political purpose.

**Christ Church**—one of the largest of the Oxford Colleges. It was founded in 1525 by Cardinal Wolsey.

**Writership . . . Company**—See Sketch of Indian History. The staff of the E. I. Co. consisted of merchants, factors, and writers. The *writer* entered the service as a clerk or book keeper; from this position he rose to be a *factor*, who inspected and bought the goods, and finally attained the position of a *merchant*, who had charge of the "Factory," or place of trade.

## CHAPTER II.

**Fort William**—erected by the British in 1757 to protect Calcutta (on the Hooghly) the capital of Bengal. It was the scene of the massacre of the "Black Hole."

**Dupleix, Joseph** (pronounced *Du-plā*)—Governor of the French possessions in India. At first, a clever but unscrupulous trader; afterwards, a scheming politician and intriguer for territorial possessions and power in India; for a time successful, but ultimately unfortunate, ruined and disgraced. See Macaulay's essay on Lord Clive. Also, Sketch of Indian History (p. ix).

**The War . . . Carnatic**—See Sketch of Indian History (p. ix).

**Clive, Robert**—Baron Plassey [1725-74]. See Macaulay's essay.

**Mogul**—the Mahommedan ruler at Delhi.

**Bengal, Orissa, and Bahar**—Bengal is the largest and most populous of the twelve provinces of British India; capital, Calcutta. Orissa and Bahar, the two provinces within the presidency of Bengal; Bahar lies to the north, Orissa to the south.

**Surajah Dowlah**—See Macaulay's essay on Lord Clive.

**Dutch Company**—See Sketch Indian History (p. viii).

**Nabob**—(corruption of *Nawab*) deputy of the Nizam, who derived his power from the Mogul rulers at Delhi.

**Black Hole**—a confined gaol-room at Fort William, in which 146 English prisoners were thrust over a hot summer night, in June, 1756. All but 23 were found dead in the morning, having been suffocated or trampled to death. See an account of the atrocity in Macaulay's essay on "Lord Clive."

**Plassey**—This battle, which was fought in a grove, 70 miles north of Calcutta, practically established British rule in India. It was won by Lord Clive, June 23rd, 1757, with a small army of 2,000 Sepoys, 1,000 Europeans, and 8 cannon, against the forces of Surajah Dowlah, numbering 35,000 foot, 15,000 horse, and 50 cannon.

**Meer Jaffer**.—After the victory of Plassey, Dowlah was deposed from the vice-royalty of Bengal, and by his successor put to death. The British gave Jaffer the nominal rule of the province; but he was afterwards dethroned in favour of his son-in-law, Meer Cosim. The latter, however, revolted, and at Patna massacred 2,000 Sepoys and 200 Europeans. By the battle of Buxar, won by Sir Hector Munro in 1764, Bengal was reconquered, and both it and the adjoining province of Oude became subject to Britain. Oude was for a time restored on the payment of an enormous ransom. From this period the native rulers were for the most part puppets of the British administration of Calcutta, and the East India Co. levied on the territories of the Nabobs at its will. See essay on Lord Clive.

**On one side . . . morality**.—Note this fine passage, in which the essayist sets forth the malign influence of a dominant over a subject race.

**Mr. Vansittart**—Interim Governor of Bengal in Lord Clive's absence in England (1760-65). Hastings was a member of Council at Calcutta during his administration.

**There was . . . freebooter**.—Note here the evils of the East India Co.'s rule at the period, and the attitude of Hastings, in taking no part in the common plunder.

**Rotten Boroughs**.—towns, the electorate of which could be bought by aspirants for Parliamentary honours.

**St. James' Square**,—a home of fashion in the neighbourhood of St. James' Palace, London.

**Buccaneer**—a pirate. **Galleon**—a Spanish trading-ship.

### CHAPTER III.

**Revival of Letters**—an intellectual movement which spread over Europe at the beginning of the 16th century.

**It is to be remembered . . . intercourse**—Observe Macaulay's sympathy with culture, and his approving comment on Hastings' literary tastes, and the projects he had in his mind for extending a knowledge of Oriental languages.

**Company**—the East India Co.

**Ha'fiz and Ferdu'si**—Persian poets, the former of the 13th, and the latter of the 10th century.

**Johnson, Samuel**, (1709-84)—a famous critic and lexicographer, whom Smollett, the novelist, called "The Great Cham of Literature." See Boswell's "Life of Johnson," and Macaulay's essay thereon.

**The Directors**—The London Managers of the East India Co.

**Madras**,—the capital of Madras Presidency, and the earliest settlement of the E. I. Co. in India.

**Pagodas**—An East India coin, worth about \$2.

**Indiaman**—one of the old sailing ships trading to India.

**Franconia**—now Bavaria, in Germany.

### CHAPTER IV.

**Fort St. George**—Madras.

**Constitutional check**—a provision in the Constitution, or form of Government, to check abuses.

**Delhi**,—a wealthy city, on the Jumna, in the northern part of Hindostan, and for over 200 years the seat of the Mogul power in India.

**There was . . . Pepin**.—Note Macaulay's wealth and ready resources of illustration, though here it is rather recondite. The same illustration, almost in the same words, does duty in Macaulay's essay on Lord Clive, *q. v.*

**Augustulus Odoacer**—At the period of the Fall of the Western Empire the Roman emperors were mere tools of the German generals. Odoacer, (434-493) a son of a chieftain of one of the Scyrii tribes of the Danube, entered the imperial service, and in the year 476, at the head of his barbarian mercenaries, invaded Italy and demanded to be made proprietor of one-third of its soil. Romulus Augustulus, a youthful son of Orestes, was then Emperor. On Odoacer's demand being refused, his fellow-soldiers deposed Augustulus and made Odoacer King of Italy. For thirteen years he reigned with undisputed sway. In Theodoric's invasion of Italy Odoacer was repeatedly defeated, and finally perished at hands of the Goths.

**Merovingians, Charles Martel, Pepin**—Merovingians a once vigorous dynasty that ruled Germany from the time of Clovis to that of Charlemagne. With the death of Dagabert (A. D. 638) the Kings became mere shadows of power beside their high officers of State. These were called Mayors of the Palace. Charles Martel and the Pepins of Haristel, about the end of the Merovingian line, filled this ancestral office, and were the real rulers of the country. Their descendants afterwards succeeded to the throne of Germany.

**At present**,—When Macaulay wrote his essay, in 1841. The power is now vested in the Crown, represented by the Government of the day, and by the Secretary of State for India.

**Mr. Pitt, the younger**, (1759-1806) son of the Earl of Chatham, and for 17 years Prime Minister of England. In 1784 Pitt passed in Parliament what is known as "The

India Bill," establishing a Board of Control over the affairs of the East India Company. See Macaulay's essay on Pitt.

**Mr. Dundas**—(1740-1811)—afterwards Viscount Melville. A Scottish statesman in the British Parliament who assisted Pitt in passing his India Bill.

**Burke, Edmund**,—(1730-97)—a distinguished statesman, eloquent orator, and able philosophic writer. With the two other great Whig orators of the period—Fox and Sheridan—Burke won undying fame by his magnificent speeches on the impeachment of Warren Hastings.

## CHAPTER V.

**Mussulman**,—a believer in the religion of Mahommed.

**Important, lucrative and splendid**—A severe taste would cancel the third adjective: it has a weakening effect.

**Brahmin**.—An Indian of the highest or priestly caste.

**Maharajah**.—*lit.* "Great Rajah." Rajah is the title borne by a native prince; his territory is called a *raj*.

**Caste**.—a social status rigidly observed among the Hindoos. It rests upon distinctions of race, occupation, and geographical position, which sharply define the lines of society in the East. Occupation generally marks the dividing line. The four classes which caste recognizes are the Brahmins or priests, the soldiery, the traders, and the agricultural population. As a rule, the Hindoo remains for life in the caste in which he is born.

**What the Italian . . . Sidney**.—Note in this clever disquisition on the Bengalee character; 1, Macaulay's love of minute details; 2, his fondness for antithesis; 3, his apt comparisons and wealth of illustration; 4, the art with which he piles up an indictment; and, 5, the climactic force with which he brings home to the reader the ingrained deceit of Nuncomar. The passage is also a good example of parallel construction.

**He lives . . . vapour bath**.—This may be said to be literally true; for the atmosphere of the Valley of the Ganges, owing to the great heat, is at times like that arising from a steam bath. Its weakening effect upon the physical and mental framework of the Bengalee is well brought out in the illustration which immediately follows.

**Ionian**,—one of an effeminate race, once inhabiting Ionia, in Asia Minor. **Juvenal**, (A.D. 30-100), last of the Roman poets and satirists.

**Jew . . . Dark Ages**.—The Jews of the period (A.D. 500-1400) were in so-called Christian countries, a down-trodden race, subjected to every outrage.

**Stoics . . . ideal sage**.—a sect of Greek philosophers, led by Zeno, who taught his followers to be indifferent to suffering and all ill.

**Mucius**,—a valorous Roman, remarkable for his fortitude in bearing suffering.

**Algernon Sidney** (1622-83)—an English patriot who, with Lords Russell and Essex, was accused of taking part in the Rye House Plot against Charles II. He was found guilty, though on sufficient evidence, by the infamous Judge Jeffreys, and beheaded on Tower Hill. His demeanour at his execution has gained him the admiration of history.

**French . . . Carnatic**.—See Sketch of Indian History, (p. ix).

## CHAPTER VI.

**Leadenhall Street**.—A street in London in which were the offices of the East India Co.

**Double Government**,—the dominant rule of the English and the subordinate local rule of the native princes. Clive, it will be remembered, entrusted the internal government of Bengal—the collection of the revenue, the administration of justice, the maintenance of order, &c.—to a native minister of the Nabob of the Province. It was this Hastings now determined to get rid of, and to assume for the Company the entire

internal administration. The dual system of government extended from 1765, when Clive established it, to the present time, 1772, when Hastings abolished it and removed the Provincial exchequer from Moorshedabad to Calcutta, appointing European officers, under the title of Collectors, to superintend the collections, and to preside in the revenue courts. In this great administrative work Hastings was to be no less successful than in his military policy, though it led him into very questionable transactions with, and at times into rapacious measures in regard to, some of the native rulers.

**Patna**,—capital of the then Province of Bahar, situate on the Ganges, north-west of Calcutta. It was the scene of the first Sepoy mutiny, quelled by Sir Hector Munro, and came into prominence during the revolt of Meer Cossim. Schitab (pr. She-tawb) Roy was at this period Rajah.

**Munny Begum**—female guardian of the young Nabob of Bengal, who is said to have made presents to Hastings, to whom she owed her appointment. Records concerning her presents were excluded as evidence on Hastings' trial.

## CHAPTER VII.

**Lacs of rupees**,—a lao is 100,000; a silver rupee is worth about fifty cents; a gold rupee about \$7.50.

**Govern leniently . . . rapacious**.—Note here Macaulay's scarcely concealed sarcasm and his use of antithesis.

**Corah and Allahabad**,—two provinces, lying in the north-west of India, sold by the English to the Nabob of Oude. The city of Allahabad is at the confluence of the Jumna and the Ganges.

**On the plea . . . concessions**.—Since the decline of the Mogul power the Mahrattas exercised no little influence in Northern Hindostan.

**Vizier . . . Hindostan**—Sujah Dowlah, Prince of Oude, (1754-75) assumed the title of Vizier (Prime Minister) or deputy of the Mogul.

**Electors . . . Grand Marshal**—rulers of two Prussian provinces, who had a vote in electing the Emperor of Germany: hence the title of "Electors."

## CHAPTER VIII.

**Rich . . . Sanscrit**—Sanscrit was the ancient language of India, and that in which the Sacred Books of the Hindoos were written.

**Hyphasis and Hystaspes**—the Sutlej (? the Beas) and the Jellum, the great feeders of the river Indus, which drains part of the northern Himalayas.

**Ghizni**—a town and fortress in Afghanistan, taken by storm in 1839 during English interference with Afghan affairs.

**Great mountain ridge**—the Hindoo Koosh range of the Himalayas, through the passes of which the Mohammedan conquerors of India entered Hindostan.

**Cabul and Candahar** the two chief cities of Afghanistan; the former is the residence of the Ameer.

**Rohillas**—a brave but turbulent people, of Afghan origin, who, since Ahmad Shah's desolating invasion in 1761, had held possession of Rohilcund, a province lying to the north-west of Oude, between the Himalayas and the Ganges. In the years 1773-4 the Rohillas were crushed by the forces of the Nabob of Oude and the English troops Hastings had lent out for hire. Hastings' conduct was wrong in principle, for the Rohillas had not provoked the English: while to aid in their extermination was to countenance a warfare of oriental savagery, however much the alliance and the loan of the troops relieved the ever-pressing wants of the Bengal treasury. Macaulay's story is however an exaggeration of what really occurred, and his glittering phrases lack the sobriety of truth. See on this point, Sir Alfred Lyall's "Warren Hastings," in the Series of English Men of Action, pp. 44-50.

**Kumaon**—formerly a province lying close to the Himalayas, near the sources of

the Ganges. The latter, rising in the Himalayas, flows south-east to the sea through the North-west provinces, Oude, Bahar, and Bengal. Its length is 1,500 miles.

**Aurangzebe**—(1658-1707) the sixth and most princely of the Mohammedan emperors.

**Lahore** . . . **Comorin**—i.e. from the north to the south of India. Lahore, the capital of the Punjab; Cape Comorin, the most southerly point of Hindostan.

**Sujah Dowlah**—See note, previous Chapter, "Vizier . . . Hindostan," (not to be confounded with Surajah Dowlah, Nabob of Bengal, of "Black Hole" infamy).

**Catherine to Poland**—During the reign of the Empress Catherine II. of Russia (1762-96) there were three partitions of the once Kingdom of Poland, viz., in 1772, in 1793, and in 1795. Austria and Germany had a share in the spoil; but the bulk of the territory was annexed by Russia.

**Bonaparte** . . . **Spain**—In 1808 Napoleon, wishing to annex Spain and Portugal to France, sent an army to enter Madrid and proclaim his brother, Joseph Bonaparte, King. This led to what is known in British history as the "Peninsular War."

**Was it . . . day?**—Note, in this fine tribute to British daring, the irony that lies beneath it.

**If we understand . . . other**—Note Macaulay's indignant comment on the infamous Rohilla war, and his hot arguments in reply to the view of the matter taken by the biographer of Hastings.

**German Princes** . . . **Americans**—Hessians and other Continental troops were used as "auxiliaries" by Britain in the Revolutionary war. The German princes who let them out for hire Macaulay terms **Hussar-mongers**—i.e. traffickers in horse-soldiers.

**Major Scott** (of the Bengal army)—a member of the British Parliament, to whom Hastings, on his return from India, foolishly entrusted his defence against impeachment.

**Caput lupinum**—lit. "a wolfish head," or, freely interpreted, a hungry and unscrupulous invader.

## CHAPTER IX.

**Mr. Hastings** . . . **violated**—Here the essayist, with keen irony, again falls upon Hastings' biographer.

**Lord North**—British Prime Minister (1770-82) and tool of George III. during the American Revolutionary war. He resigned office at the close of the humiliating struggle, and was succeeded by the Whigs. By the "Regulating Act" (1773) Hastings became Governor-General of India.

## CHAPTER X.

**Sir Philip Francis**—(1740-1818) Public interest in this character is owing not so much to his relations with Warren Hastings in India, nor to his active hostility to him in Parliament, but to the theory which connects him with the authorship of "The Letters of Junius." These famous political articles, which trenchantly attacked the Ministry of the day, appeared anonymously in the *Public Advertiser* during the years 1769-72. The secret of their authorship, though Macaulay, on what seems good evidence, traces it to Francis, has never been disclosed.

**Lord Chatham**—(1708-78) William Pitt, the elder, a great English statesman, and for a time, one of the chief opponents of Sir Robert Walpole. He was Prime Minister during Clive's rule in India, and at the period when Wolfe was laying siege to Quebec. During his administration the war against France was conducted with great spirit, and her navy was all but annihilated. He opposed the taxation of the American Colonists, but was equally opposed to granting them their independence. While delivering a powerful speech in the House of Lords against making peace with America, he was

seized w  
1778. S

Lord  
State to  
James F

The  
ing Fran  
resemble

Corn  
Ben  
spere.

Buny  
"Pilgrim

Cerv  
Horn

entitled  
Wood

Letters"  
Old S

deprived  
Geor

Wilkes a  
Lord

the Briti  
Midd

language  
ministry

fled to F  
was thric

and rioti  
rights of  
majority

Sir B  
Inns

Lincoln's  
Mahr

downfall  
times by

Each rei  
over the

contests  
With the

reigning  
infamous

Some  
this pass

man who  
the ende

of retail  
Oate

century.  
being ha

West  
William

seized with an apoplectic fit, and died a few weeks afterwards, on the 11th of May, 1778. *See* Macaulay's essay.

**Lord Holland**—an English statesman, descended from Henry Fox, Secretary of State to George II. He was trained for public life under his famous uncle, Charles James Fox. *See* Macaulay's essay.

**The internal . . . Francis**.—Note here Macaulay's argument for considering Francis the author of Junius's Letters, based on similarity of literary style and on resemblance in moral character.

**Cornelle**—(1606-84) a great French dramatist.

**Ben Jonson**—(1574-1637) English poet-laureate, dramatist, and friend of Shakespeare.

**Bunyan, John**—(1628-88) "the Bedford tinker," who wrote his renowned "Pilgrim's Progress" in gaol. *See* Macaulay's essay.

**Cervantes**—(1547-1616) Spanish novelist, and author of "Don Quixote."

**Horne Tooke**—(1736-1812), political writer and author of a philological treatise, entitled "The Diversions of Purley."

**Woodfall**—(1745-1803) printer of *The Public Advertiser*, in which "Junius's Letters" appeared. He was prosecuted on account of the publication.

**Old Sarum**—a "pocket borough" in Wiltshire, which the Reform Bill of 1832 deprived of representation in Parliament.

**George Grenville**—(1712-70) English Prime Minister, 1763-65, during the John Wilkes agitation.

**Lord Suffolk**—(1739-1820) John Howard, 15th Earl of Suffolk, a general officer in the British army.

**Middlesex election**—John Wilkes (1727-97), having been guilty of seditious language in articles written for his paper, *The North Briton*, while denouncing the ministry of the day for agreeing to the peace with America, he was prosecuted and fled to France. In 1768 he returned, and was elected to Parliament for Middlesex. He was thrice expelled from the House, and his expulsion gave rise to prolonged agitation and rioting. In this agitation the freedom of the press was first asserted, and the rights of constituencies against violation of the Constitution on the part of a despotic majority in the House of Commons, were vindicated.

## CHAPTER XI.

**Sir Elijah Impey**—*See* note Chapter I.

**Inns of Court**—the four Law Societies of London—the Inner and Middle Temple, Lincoln's Inn, and Gray's Inn.

**Mahrattas**—This famous Hindoo confederacy, which had its rise in 1650 and its downfall in 1818, was composed of the several independent tribes ruled at various times by the chiefs Bonsla, Sevahee, Scindia, Holkar, and the Guicowar of Baroda. Each reigning house had its own distinctive territory, though they all raided, not only over the Deccan, but at times over nearly the whole of Hindostan. The English contests with the Mahrattas occurred during the years 1779-81, 1803-4, and 1817-18. With the latter year the Mahratta power was completely broken. The son of the last reigning Rajah, who was a British prisoner in the neighbourhood of Cawnpore, was the infamous Nana Sahib, whose connection with the mutiny of 1857 is historic.

**Some . . . helpless**.—Note in the apt illustration in the first sentence of this passage the fate which not infrequently, though perhaps undeservedly, befalls a man whom fortune deserts. Note, also, to what lengths Asiatic mendacity went in the endeavour to accomplish Hastings' ruin, and see what befel Nuncomar in the way of retaliation.

**Oates, Bedloe, Dangerfield**—three scoundrels who, at the close of the 17th century, pretended to have discovered that plots against the English Government were being hatched by Catholics.

**Westminster Hall**—the "Hall of Rufus," the great historic edifice built by William II., which adjoins the English Houses of Parliament.

**Biographers excepted**—a sarcastic reference to Hastings' biographer, Mr. Gleig, who wished to relieve the Governor of responsibility for the fate of Nuncomar. Macaulay, while he condemns the act, holds Chief Justice Impey, and not Hastings, responsible.

## CHAPTER XII.

**Dacca**—once the capital of Bengal, 150 miles N.E. of Calcutta.

**Lord Stafford**—a Catholic nobleman executed in 1680 on a charge of treason made by Titus Oates. See note to page 31, line 1.

**Tour to the Hebrides**—an account of a visit paid by Dr. Samuel Johnson to the Scottish Hebrides, published in 1773.

**Jones's Persian Grammar**—a work published in 1771 by the eminent Asiatic scholar, Sir William Jones (1745-94).

## CHAPTER XIII.

**Would . . . win**—Macbeth, Act 1, sc. V.

**Court of Proprietors**—General meeting of the E. I. Company shareholders.

**Lord Sandwich**—John Montagu (1718-92), an English statesman.

**Berar**—one of the central provinces of India, made over to British administration by the Nizam of Hyderabad.

## CHAPTER XIV.

**The crisis . . . dominions**—England was at that time at war with America, France, Spain, and Holland. The personal ministry of George III. was as disastrous as the ministry of the first Pitt under George II. had been glorious. See Macaulay's review of Hastings' administration, Chapter XXI.

**Armed . . . Baltic**—a mutual compact by Russia, Sweden and Denmark to resist England's right of search on the high seas.

**Straits of Calpe**—Straits of Gibraltar.

**Sevajee**—(1627-80) founder of the Mahratta confederacy. He long waged war against the Mogul dynasty, and from the Emperor Aurungzebe extorted recognition of his kingdom.

**The Bonslas . . . Holkar**—See note on the Mahrattas, Chapter XI.

**Guzerat**—a province in Western Hindostan, on the Gulf of Cambay; capital, Baroda.

**Malwa**—a district to the east of Guzerat and south of Bundelound.

**Gooti**—a fortified point on the Eastern Ghauts, to the north of Mysore.

**Tanjore**—a district in South-eastern India.

**Double Government**—The two system of rules in India—the one established by Clive and abolished by Hastings, and the other which arose out of the growing power of the independent princes and the decline of Mogul authority at Delhi; not to be confounded with "Double Government," Chapter VI.

**House of Tamerlane**—descendants of Timur, the Tartar, who in 1400 founded a new dynasty in the Mogul kingdom.

**Roi faineant** (*rwah fā-nā-ong*)—a lazy, do-nothing King.

**Sattara**—a fortified town on the Western Ghauts, south of Bombay.

**Peshwa**—The titular head of the Mahratta confederacy at Poonah.

**Poonah**—Formerly the capital of the Western Mahrattas, to the south of Bombay.

Auru  
Emperor

Bejap

Louis  
consort,

Cairo

Pond

Carnatic.  
See sketc

Lasc

Sir E  
1760; at

Ali was d

Lally  
wash and

Wan  
Pondiche

Polill  
the above

The  
II., p. 75

Wat  
which wa

Lord Ma

Algu

Spon  
to prison

Johnson

Rich,  
with wha

Jeffer  
"Bloody

Derv  
Louis

nature."

Hyde  
the Niza

Mahratta

Mahratta

incensed

arms, an

was not

India wa

peace wa

lived to d

when tha

Baird; a

in it. Th

Governor

**Aurungabad**—a city lying to the n. e. of Bombay, a favourite residence of the Emperor Aurungzebe.

**Bejapoor**—a town in Bombay Presidency, west of Hyderabad.

**Louis XVI.**—(1754-93) King of France, beheaded during the Revolution. His consort, Marie Antoinette, was executed nine months after him.

**Cairo**—On the Nile; capital of Egypt.

**Pondicherry**—a city south of Madras, and chief of the French possessions in the Carnatic. It was captured by the English in 1760, and restored to the French in 1815. See sketch of Indian history.

**Lascars**—Native seamen of India.

**Sir Eyre Coote**—an Irish General in the British army, victor at Wandewash, 1760; at Pondicherry, 1761; and at Porto Novo, 1781. In this last engagement Hyder Ali was defeated, and shortly afterwards the first Mysore war was brought to a close.

**Lally, Thomas**—an Irishman in the French service, who commanded at Wandewash and Pondicherry.

**Wandewash**—a French stronghold in the Carnatic, situate between Madras and Pondicherry.

**Pollilore, Porto Novo**—two villages in the southern part of Mysore, scenes of the above-mentioned engagements.

## CHAPTER XV.

**The "Regulating Act," 1773**—See Green's "Short History," chap. X., sec. II., p. 758.

**Wat Tyler**—the leader of a peasant insurrection in Kent in 1380, the origin of which was a taxgatherer's insult to a young girl of Dartford. Tyler was slain by the Lord Mayor of London.

**Alguazils**—(*al'ga'zeels*) a Spanish term for an inferior officer of justice.

**Sponging-houses**—places to which debtors used to be taken before commitment to prison, and where bailiffs used to *sponge* upon them, or riot at their cost. See Johnson's Dictionary.

**Rich, quiet, and infamous**—Note the epigrammatic force of these words, and with what brevity they summarize the transaction.

**Jefferies**—(sometimes, Jeffreys) a judge of unsavoury fame who conducted the "Bloody Assize" after the Monmouth Rebellion, 1685.

## CHAPTER XVI.

**Dervise**—a Mohammedan priest or monk of great austerity and professing poverty.

**Louis XI.**—King of France (1461-83) "of iron will and subtle though pitiless nature."

**Hyder Ali**—The two strongest Mussulman potentates in India at this period were the Nizam of the Deccan and Hyder Ali, of Mysore. Both were anxious to induce the Mahrattas to join them against the English. The Nizam of Hyderabad and the Mahratta of Nagpore, Hastings, by his diplomacy, had pacified. The ruler of Mysore, incensed at the reckless conduct of the Madras Government, had, however, taken up arms, and his calvary ravaged the country to the walls of Madras. The Mysore army was not only well disciplined but admirably handled. For a time the fate of Southern India was in doubt. Hastings, with the help of Eyre Coote, at length saved it, and peace was concluded in 1784. Hyder Ali died in 1782, though his son, Tippoo Saib, lived to direct two later wars against the English, dying in the breach at Seringapatam when that fortress was stormed under General Harris. The assault was led by General Baird; and Colonel Sir Arthur Wellesley, afterwards Duke of Wellington, participated in it. This event occurred while a brother of the latter, the Marquis of Wellesley, was Governor-General.

**Coleroon**—(better known as the Cauvery) a river rising in Mysore and issuing on the Coromandel coast, to the south of Pondicherry.

**Mount St. Thomas**—a high elevation contiguous to Madras.

**Sir Hector Munro**—at one time Commander-in-Chief of the forces in India and member of the Madras Council. He had a long and honourable military career in the East. He distinguished himself in engagements with Sujah Dowlah, with the Mogul Emperor, and with Hyder Ali. The mutiny at Patna was suppressed by Munro. See note "Patna," Chapter VI.

**Baillie, Colonel**—After desperate conflicts with Hyder's army this officer's small but gallant force was obliged to surrender, and was cut to pieces.

## CHAPTER XVII.

**Benares**—a city of great wealth, on the Ganges, and capital of the province. By the Hindoos it is esteemed the chief of the sacred cities of Hindostan.

**His first design . . . Cashmere**—a fine descriptive passage, enriched by the effective illustration in the closing sentence.

**Sacred apes, holy bulls**—In India both are considered sacred; ape-worship is common in the East.

**Golconda**—a city in the Dominions of the Nizam of Hyderabad, once famous for its diamond mines. It was twice besieged by the Emperor Aurungzebe.

**Cashmere**—a province close to the Himalayas, and lying between the Punjab and Kashgaria. It is noted for its rich Cashmere shawls.

**The great anarchy**—Consequent upon the fall of the Mogul Kingdom (after the murder, in 1759, of the Emperor Alamgir II.) hastened by Persian invasion and Mahratta conquest. Upon the death of the Emperor there ensued a long period of strife among the native tribes for mastery in India. Mohammedan rule, after this, was merely nominal; while that of Britain became more and more dominant.

**Cheyte Sing**—Rajah of Benares. Hastings' part in the Rohilla war, and his oppression and plunder of Cheyte Sing, the Queen mother and princesses of Oude, are great stains upon his reputation. The shameful story is told with considerable detail by Macaulay, and it forms the first of the charges in Hastings' impeachment. For its motive, see the essay, p. 78, li. 4-7. "The plan . . . possessions."

**Carlovingian empire**—**Hugh Capet**—The Carlovingian line of Franco-German sovereigns extends from Charlemagne to Louis (or Ludwig) V. At its dissolution, the Capetian line begins with the nominal rule, in 987, of Hugh Capet, Duke of the Franks. With the accession of this dynasty begins the line of French kings proper. The authority of Hugh Capet was not good throughout France. The dukes of Brittany and Normandy, while they paid homage to Capet, were supreme in their own districts.

**Charles the Tenth**, in 1824, succeeded Louis XVIII. on the throne of France, but was exiled six years afterwards, when Louis Philippe ascended the throne. Charles X. pursued a retrograde policy, attacked the freedom of the press, and encouraged Ultramontane pretensions. In July, 1830, he published the ordinances which threw Paris into the revolution known as the Three Days of Barricades, the result of which was to lose him his throne.

**Prince Louis Bonaparte**—"Louis Napoleon" is no doubt here intended. In August, 1840, the nephew of the first Napoleon, afterwards Emperor of the French, planned a second invasion of France with the object of succeeding to the throne. While an exile in England he left its shores with a small following, and landed at Boulogne, where he unfurled the Imperial standard, but was ignominiously beaten off, and subsequently captured and imprisoned. He afterwards escaped from the place of his confinement, and on the abdication of Louis Philippe, returned to France, and by the *coup d'etat* of December 2nd, 1851, became President and subsequently Emperor.

**Of the existing governments . . . chose**—In these paragraphs we find some justification, though not on moral grounds, for Hastings' conduct. Among the native rulers the real and the nominal sovereignty was, as Macaulay remarks, disjoined. So far as titles and forms went, the Mogul ruled; but the "heir of Tamerlane" was now a British captive, and his lieutenants were "independent princes." As Hastings

viewed  
were th  
De f

He v  
Majo  
war.  
consider

Asa  
ation of  
dispoile  
axiom u  
greatest  
and, in  
dynastie  
those th

Luck  
the relie  
rebellio

Chur  
The  
when th  
two or t  
and cou  
India C  
coaxing  
the ren  
deavour

Fyze  
east of

Not  
Colonie  
indep  
by the  
possess  
Hasting  
Chap. 3

Lew  
time tw

Mar  
1722) w  
Anne (G  
German  
the Du  
victorie  
honour  
Wel  
Penins

viewed the situation, the native sovereigns might "play at royalty," but the English were the masters of India.

**De facto**—*Lat.* really; 'from the fact.' **De jure**—by right; 'from the law.'

### CHAPTER XVIII.

**He was now . . . breach**—*Cf.* p. 37, ll. 9-17

**Major Popham**—a British officer who distinguished himself in the first Mahratta war. He captured Lahar and Pateta, and stormed the rock-fortress of Gwalior, considered the key of Hindostan.

### CHAPTER XIX.

**Asaph-ul-Dowlah**—Nabob of Oude. *See* Sheridan's great speech on the "Spoliation of the Begums," in connection with the impeachment of Hastings. Oude now dispoiled was finally annexed under Lord Dalhousie's administration in 1856. The axiom upon which that high-minded statesman acted was "the greatest good to the greatest number." Princely debauchees, his theory was, only cumbered the ground; and, in annexing Oude, he did so on the plea that "no false sentiment should preserve dynasties which had forfeited our sympathies by generations of misrule, or prolong those that had no natural successor."

**Lucknow**—At the period the capital of Oude, and, in 1857, famous as the scene of the relief, by Sir H. Havelock, of its beleaguered English defenders during the Sepoy rebellion. It is situate on the Goomti, a tributary of the Ganges.

**Chunar (Ku')**—a fortified town on the Ganges, about 20 miles s. w. of Benares.

**The Begums**—the wife and mother of Sujah Dowlah, Nabob of Oude. In 1775, when this ruler died, the two Begums claimed that his hoarded treasure, amounting to two or three millions sterling, had been made over to them as their private property, and could not be used as revenues of the State for the payment of tribute to the East India Co. or for any other purpose. The new ruler, Asaph-ul-Dowlah, by dint of coaxing, had got his mother and grandmother to dole out some of the treasure. It was the remainder Hastings set his eyes upon, and with the Nabob's connivance, endeavoured to wring from the princesses, with what success will be seen from the text.

**Fyzabad**—(modern spelling, *Faizabad*)—a town in the Province of Oude, 60 miles east of Lucknow.

### CHAPTER XXI.

**Not only . . . Hastings**—At this period the United States (the "thirteen Colonies") had won independence; Ireland was putting forward a claim for her independence, and for a time (from 1782 to 1800) had been given a local parliament and by the treaties of Paris and Versailles England had surrendered to France and Spain possessions she had formerly wrested from these powers. In India, thanks to Warren Hastings, Britain had the while been wholly a gainer. *See* Green's "Short History," Chap. x, Sec. 2. (Page 761).

**Lewis XVI.** . . . **Emperor Joseph**—France and Germany were at the time two of the most populous states in Europe.

**Marlborough . . . deputies**—John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough (1650-1722) while conducting the war in Spain and in Flanders, during the reign of Queen Anne (1702-14), had under him, besides his English troops, those of Holland and Germany. In his campaigns he was constantly thwarted by the German princes and the Dutch deputies. His military genius, nevertheless, enabled him to win great victories; though his political foes in England prevented him from long enjoying the honours of them.

**Wellington . . . Mr. Percival**—The Duke of Wellington, during the Peninsular war, was embarrassed at times by the want of ready support on the part of

the Spanish Juntas, or War Committee, and of the Ministry which represented the Portugul Regency, while the Queen was insane. After the defeat at Corunna of Sir John Moore, Mr. Percival, the English Prime Minister, (1809-12) was also lukewarm in prosecuting the war against the French in Spain and Portugal: and he threw on Wellington the responsibility of remaining further with the English troops in the Peninsula. Wellington readily accepted the responsibility and added to the battle-flag of England the honours of Talavera, Badajos, and Salamanca.

**Milton, John**—(1608-74), one of England's chief poets and a great prose writer; author of *Paradise Lost* and *Paradise Regained*, &c.

**Adam Smith**—(1723-90), political economist, and author of *The Wealth of Nations*, published in 1776, a work which may be said to have given birth to the doctrine of "Free Trade."

**To substitute . . . Arabian expositions**—In Hastings' time the practical wisdom of the West, with the fruit of discovery in every department of thought, had not been introduced into India. Learning was still represented by the puerilities of the Brahminical schools, or by the hazy notions of the physical world of the ancient Greeks, with Arabian interpretations thereof, which had got into India through its Mohammedan conquerors.

**Virtuous ruler**—Lord Wm. Bentinck, Governor-General (1828-35), and an enlightened ruler. He abolished *sati*, or widow-burning, and suppressed thuggism, or assassination by strangling. Macaulay penned the following inscription for Bentinck's monument at Calcutta:—"He abolished cruel rites; he effaced humiliating distinctions; he gave liberty to the expression of public opinion; his constant study was to elevate the intellectual and moral character of the natives committed to his charge."

**Asiatic Society**—an association of learned men who, at Calcutta, in 1783, founded a society for the study of Oriental literature.

**Sir Wm. Jones**—(1746-94), a famous Orientalist, "who by pointing out the connection of Sanskrit and Latin and Greek laid the foundation of philology."

**Pundits**—(sometimes, Pandits,) learned Brahmins, expounders of the law.

**What . . . Christians**—The Portuguese during the whole of the 16th century enjoyed a monopoly of the East India trade. The contemporary narratives of their conquests in India are full of horror. At Goa, which from 1510 has been the capital of Portuguese India, they established the Inquisition, and treated the Hindoos with the greatest cruelty, as enemies of Portugal and of Christ.

## CHAPTER XXII.

**Hurricane . . . cavalry**—Note the beauty of the metaphor. The Mahratta cavalry were noted for the swiftness of their movements and the unrestrained force of their attacks.

**Nurses . . . Sahib Warren Hostein**—a fine touch this of Macaulay, and a happy illustration of the "superstitious admiration" of the native Hindoos for Warren Hastings. The whole passage is full of beauty.

**Sahib**—Lord; an East Indian courtesy title for an English gentleman.

**Zemindar**—a magistrate, landholder, and revenue collector.

**Carlton House**—a luxuriantly-furnished palace in London, given to the Prince of Wales, afterwards George IV.

**Palais Royal**—at the period, a royal residence in Paris, furnished with princely splendour.

**"His elegant Marian"**—the divorced Baroness Inhoff, whom Hastings married.

**Sir Charles Grandison, Miss Byron**—characters in Richardson's novel of *Sir Charles Grandison*, published in 1754. Sir Walter Scott speaks of the hero of this work of fiction as "the faultless monster that the world ne'er saw."

## CHAPTER XXIII.

**Otium divos rogat**—(*Everyone asks the gods for repose*); the opening line of Od. XVI., Bk. II., by the Latin poet. Horace, (B.C. 68).

Lord  
Governor  
during

Who  
what ce  
Chel  
shire.

Grat  
eloquen

Sur  
power o  
compar  
ancient  
fully di

Han  
Punic w

Ther  
of Thes

Wee  
Asia

Lore  
tongues

Lore  
statem  
ingham  
Prime  
Genera

Thu  
from 17

Mr.  
The

Lord N  
Chap. 2

Bro  
politic

Vir  
B.C. 19

Dep  
Indian  
stood t  
in Par

Mis  
to Has  
indign

Fox  
a bitte  
debate

Bur  
flection  
Revolu  
1789, i  
public

Las  
Bishop

**Lord Teignmouth**—(Sir John Shore), a civil servant in India who rose to be Governor-General (1793-8.) His knowledge of India was in his time unsurpassed, and during his administration the "Permanent Land Settlement" was effected.

**Who, like . . . need**—Observe how nicely turned is this compliment, yet what censure it conveys.

**Cheltenham**—at the period, a fashionable English watering-place, in Gloucestershire.

**Grattan, Henry**—(1746-1820), an Irish orator and statesman, noted for his eloquent speeches on Irish independence.

**Surrounded . . . Trafalgar**—another illustration of Macaulay's wonderful power of utilizing his vast knowledge for the purpose of illustration, by contrast or comparison. At Waterloo and Trafalgar, modern warfare being so different from ancient warfare, Hannibal and Themistocles would have been incapable of successfully directing an engagement.

**Hannibal**—(B.C. 247-183), the great Carthaginian general during the second Punic war.

**Themistocles**—(B.C. 514-449), Athenian general and statesman. By a stratagem of Themistocles the Persian fleet of Xerxes was destroyed by the Greeks at Salamis.

**Wedderburn**—(1733-1805), a Scottish judge and statesman.

**Asiaticus**—of Asia; **Bengalensis**—of Bengal.

**Lord Mansfield**—(1705-93), an eminent Scottish judge, known as the "silver-tongued Murray."

**Lord Lansdowne**—(2nd Earl of Shelburne), a General in the British army, and statesman of the time of George III. In 1782, on the decease of the Marquis of Rockingham, under whom he filled the office of Secretary of Foreign Affairs, he became Prime Minister. He died in 1805. The 5th Marquis of Lansdowne was lately Governor-General of Canada.

**Thurlow**—(1732-1806), an English judge and statesman. Was Lord Chancellor from 1783 to 1792.

**Mr. Dundas**—See note in Chapter IV. (p. 126).

**The Coalition**—the union, in 1783, of the Whigs under Fox and the Tories under Lord North, to oppose the ministry of Lord Shelburne. See Green's "Short History," Chap. X, Sec. 3, Page 764.

**Brooke's**—a club in London, the favourite social resort of the leading Whig politicians.

**Virgil's third eclogue**—a pastoral poem of the Roman poet Virgil, who died B.C. 19.

**Depending questions**—a metaphorical allusion to Mrs. Hastings' priceless Indian ear-rings, which, with "her necklace gleaming with future votes," were understood to be within the gift of the lady to those who would espouse her husband's cause in Parliament.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

**Mistook . . . ostentation**—a severe comment on Francis's life-long hostility to Hastings. Macaulay in this passage would seem to characterize Francis's moral indignation at Hastings' conduct in India as a piece of self-righteousness.

**Fox, Charles James**—(1749-1806), one of the greatest of English statesmen, and a bitter opponent of Pitt and the war with France. Burke called him the "greatest debater the world ever saw."

**Burke . . . French Republic**—In 1790 Burke published his famous *Reflections on the Revolution in France*, an eloquent attack on the principles of the Revolutionists rather than on its events. The French Revolution had its origin in 1789, in a revolt against the oppressive government of the aristocracy. The first Republic lasted from 1793 to 1804.

**Las Casas, Bartolomeo de**—(1474-1576), Apostle of the Indies and Catholic Bishop of Chiapa. His humane interest in the Indians of South America led him to

cross the Atlantic many times to plead their cause before King Ferdinand and the Spanish Court.

**Clarkson, Thomas**—(1780-1846), a Quaker philanthropist associated with Wilberforce in the crusade against the iniquity of the slave-trade. In 1808 he published his views on the subject.

**A people . . . in common**—Recent philological research shows that this statement is not correct. Both in blood and in language the people of Europe are akin to the people of India. This was not known, however, in Burke's day, nor in Macaulay's.

**His knowledge . . . London**—"This passage," says Mr. Trevelyan, the essayist's biographer, "unsurpassed as it is in force of language and splendid fidelity of detail by anything that Macaulay ever wrote or uttered, was inspired by sincere and entire sympathy with that great statesman of whose humanity and breadth of view it is the merited, and not inadequate, panegyric."

**Imaum**—a Mohammedan priest.

**Beaconsfield**—a town in Buckinghamshire, where Burke had his country residence, and where he lies buried. In St James's Street was his town residence.

**Lord George Gordon**—(1750-93), a mischievous maniac, the leader of a mob who, in 1780, on the pretext of seeking to repeal laws imposing penalties on Catholics, pillaged about London and inflamed the populace. Though acquitted on his trial for high treason, he afterwards fell into the hands of the authorities, and in 1793 died in prison.

**Dr. Dodd**—(1729-77), author of "*Beauties of Shakespeare*;" a fashionable preacher during the reign of Geo. II. and III., and at one time chaplain to the King. In 1777, he was executed for forging a bond on his patron, the Earl of Chesterfield.

**Stamp Act**—a measure passed in the English Parliament, in 1765, requiring the American Colonists to put stamps on legal documents, the sale of which would return a revenue to Britain. The obnoxious Act, though it was repealed in the following year, led to the War of Independence. See Green's "*Short History*," chap. X., sect. II., page 746.

**The Regency**—In 1788, the king for a time became mentally deranged, and the Prince of Wales advanced his right to be Regent. The King, however, recovered, and held the sceptre till 1820.

**French Revolution**—See note, Chap. XXIV., Burke. . . French Revolution.

**Bastille**—A fortress in Paris latterly used as a prison. When the Revolution broke out, the populace stormed and destroyed it, as a hated symbol of tyranny. Its capture, says Mr. Green, was taken for the sign of a new era of constitutional freedom for France and for Europe.

**Marie Antoinette**—See note to Louis XVI., Chap. XIV.

## CHAPTER XXV.

**Lord Daylesford**—a title derived from Hastings' ancestral estates in Worcester-shire.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

**Grenville, George**—head of the English Administration from 1763 to 1765.

**William Wilberforce**—(1759-1833), an English member of Parliament, noted for his philanthropy in the suppression of the slave-trade.

**Sheridan, Richard Brinsley**—(1751-1816), a brilliant orator, statesman, and dramatist. At his death Lord Byron wrote the following well-known Monody:

"Long shall we seek his likeness - long in vain,  
And turn to all of him which may remain,  
Sighing that Nature formed but one such man,  
And broke the die—in moulding Sheridan!"

See speech on the Spoliation of the Begums.

Win  
ition M  
Windh

Th  
tences  
of the  
out. T  
balanc  
of the  
me

th  
wishes  
langua

Plat  
(1899).  
sprig o  
the rul  
the Co  
conces  
public  
at this

Gre  
Bac  
1621, w  
corrup  
remitte  
Lord I  
everyt  
ing

on  
An  
oeior.  
a disag  
against

Sta  
the Lo  
making  
attain

Vic  
and St  
trial, I

Qu  
III. A  
to Vic

Sid  
high

His  
and F  
The h  
and it

Cic  
Sicily  
tion.

Ta  
whos  
Tacit  
the e

**Windham, Wm.**—(1750-1810), an eloquent statesman, and member of the Coalition Ministry of 1783. Macaulay elsewhere speaks of him as "the high-souled Windham."

## CHAPTER XXVII.

There have been . . . right to left—We here come to the opening sentences of that fascinating word-picture so frequently quoted from Macaulay, the scene of the trial of Warren Hastings. How graphic is the picture need hardly be pointed out. The stately movement of the sentences; the animation of the style, with its balanced structure, abrupt transitions, and pointed figures of speech; the splendour of the imagery, the flashing of antithesis, and the crispness and vigour of the epigrams—so characteristic of the Essay as a whole—come specially out in the description of the scene in Westminster Hall. Note in the last four words of the present passage the Essayist descends to what would seem triviality of detail, except that he wishes to make clear the allusion to the strange written characters of the Semitic languages, which are traced from right to left.

**Plantagenets**—a line of English monarchs from Henry II. (1154) to Richard II. (1399). The name is derived from the common broom of Anjou (the *planta geneti*), a sprig of which Geoffrey, the father of Henry II., used to wear in his helmet. During the rule of the Plantagenets (See the "Good Parliament" [1300-77] under Richard III.) the Commons wrested from the Crown many practical reforms, and received many concessions in the interest of the people. The right of Parliament to inquire into public abuses, and to impeach public counsellors, were among the privileges granted at this period.

**Great . . . Rufus**—See note to Westminster Hall, Chap. XI.

**Bacon, Sir Francis**—(1561-1626), statesman, author, philosopher, and judge. In 1621, while Lord High Chancellor, he was impeached for taking bribes and for other corrupt practices; and was fined and imprisoned. His sentence was afterwards remitted. Burke thus speaks of him: "Who is there that upon hearing the name of Lord Bacon does not instantly recognize everything of genius the most profound, everything of literature the most extensive, everything of discovery the most penetrating, everything of observation of human life the most distinguished and refined?"

**omers, John, Lord** (1651-1716), a great Whig leader during the reign of William Anne; an active promoter of the Revolution, friend of Addison, and Lord Chancellor. In 1701 he was impeached for alleged illegal practices, but acquitted, owing to a disagreement between the Commons and the Lords as to the mode of procedure against him.

**Stafford, Thomas Wentworth, Earl of**, (1593-1641), impeached by Pym, in the Long Parliament, for having plotted with Laud for subverting the Constitution and making Charles I. an absolute monarch. He was condemned to death by a "bill of attainder." The eloquence of his defence is a matter of history.

**Victorious party . . . fame**—the Parliamentary forces opposed to Charles and Stafford, and which ultimately brought the King to trial and to his death. At his trial, in 1649, Charles bore himself with great dignity.

**Queen . . . Brunswick**—Charlotte of Mecklenburg-Strelitz, wife of George III. House of Brunswick, or Hanover,—the line of sovereigns from George I. to Victoria.

**Siddons, Sarah**—(1755-1831), a great tragedy queen and actress, then at the height of her fame.

**Historian . . . Empire**—Edward Gibbon (1739-94), author of *The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire*, a work which gave a new impulse to historical studies. The history is grandly conceived and is rich in detail, though its style is heavily-laden and its tone contemptuous. It appeared during the years 1776-88.

**Cicero**—(B. C. 106-43), a great Roman orator and statesman. Verres, praetor of Sicily, was impeached (B. C. 70) for acts of cruelty, and Cicero conducted the prosecution. His orations on the occasion finely manifest his genius.

**Tacitus . . . Africa**—Tacitus (A. D. 55-117?), a celebrated Roman historian, whose chief works extant are *Histories*, *Annals*, *Germany*, and *Life of Agricola*. Tacitus was one of the prosecutors of Marius Priscus, Roman Governor of Africa about the end of the first century.

**Greatest Painter**—Sir Joshua Reynolds (1723-92); **Greatest Scholar**—Samuel Parr, LL.D., (1747-1825), a renowned classical scholar and editor. See De Quincey's essay.

**Charms of "her"**—Mrs. Fitzherbert, who was privately married, in 1785, to the Prince of Wales, afterwards George IV.

**Saint Cecilia**—understood to refer to Mrs. Sheridan, whose portrait Sir Joshua Reynolds had painted in the character of the patroness of Music.

**Mrs. (Elizabeth) Montagu**—(1720-1800), founder of the "Blue-Stocking Club," an author of some note, and great friend of the eminent literary men of the time. See Doran's "A Lady of the Last Century," and Boswell's "Life of Johnson."

**Ladies . . . Devonshire**—In the election canvasses of the time, it was not uncommon for ladies to solicit for their friends the votes of electors. The Duchess of Devonshire is said to have gained for Fox the vote of a butcher by allowing him to kiss her.

**The culprit . . . judges**—Note in this brief paragraph the fine description of Hastings' dignified appearance at the Bar of the Peers; also note the animation of the narrator's style.

**Mens æqua in arduis**—a mind equal, or serene, amid difficulties.

**Pro-consul**—a Roman title for the Governor of a Province.

**But neither . . . accusers**—Note here the mode of transition, from the description of the accused to that of the accusers. It is easy yet effective, and has the art of exciting the reader by its quality of suspense.

**Great age . . . eloquence**—From Pericles (B.C. 450) to Demosthenes (B.C. 322).

**English Demosthenes**—Charles James Fox. Demosthenes (B.C. 388-322) was the greatest of Athenian orators.

**English Hyperides**—Richard Brinsley Sheridan. Hyperides, a contemporary of Demosthenes, and an eloquent Greek orator. His writings have not come down to us.

**Ignorant . . . hearers**—Burke by this time had lost the ear of the House, partly owing to his political attitude, and partly to the philosophic character of his speeches, which wearied the members.

**Youngest manager**—Charles, Earl Grey (1764-1845), an English statesman of chivalrous honour, who rendered great political services in his day. At the period of Hastings' trial he was but 24 years of age, and he held the office of Prime Minister when the Reform Bill of 1832 was passed. Macaulay's panegyric is well-deserved.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

**With an exuberance . . . all!**—This is one of the most effective passages in the Essay. The Anaphora and the climax in the peroration will not escape the reader. Nor will the fine touch of the essayist be missed, where he alludes to the "resounding arches of Irish oak," as if the building itself sympathized, as has been remarked, with the great Irish orator.

**Lac**—one hundred thousand; **crore**—ten millions; **amul**—court official; **sunud**—a warrant; **perwannah**—a judge's order; **jaghire**—a tract of land; **nuzzar**, a present, or bribe made to a superior.

**The King's illness**—See note on the Regency, Chap. XXIV.

**States-General**—the Representative Assembly of France, which Louis XVI. summoned to meet during the Revolution, though it had not met since the time of Richelieu. It was afterwards called the National Assembly. "No sooner did it meet at Versailles," says Mr. Green, "than the fabric of despotism and privilege began to crumble."

**Oracles of jurisprudence**—By Metonymy, for the great law officers of the Crown, on whom the House depended for advice in legal matters.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

**Woolsack**—the seat of the Lord Chancellor in the House of Lords.

**Scattered . . . death**—Friendships had been estranged by the political differences of the time.

**The great chiefs**—Burke, Sheridan, Fox, Windham, Grey.

**He saw . . . Pantheon**—Observe the effective use of Anaphora, and the keen irony which characterizes this passage from Burke. Note also how it depreciates the value of Hastings' testimonials.

**Logan, John**—(1784-1788), divine, poet and miscellaneous writer. In 1783 Logan published a tragedy entitled "Runnimeade," founded on the story of Magna Charta; and in the following year he brought out a defence of Warren Hastings. He is a type of the political parson of the time. See Adams' "Dictionary of English Literature."

**Simpkin's Letters**—an account in verse of the Hastings' Trial, one of the many squibs which the proceedings evoked. Published in 1790.

**Anthony (Tony) Pasquin**—the name of an old Roman cobbler, who was wont to make cutting remarks about his neighbours. The name was assumed by Williams for low political objects.

**Addington, Mr. Henry**—(1757-1844). Premier (1801-4) in a ministry of the second rank of political eminence in England. Green speaks of him as "a man as dull and bigoted as George (III.) himself." He owed his elevation to office by opposing Catholic Emancipation.

## CHAPTER XXX.

**Allipore**—a suburb of Calcutta.

**Covent Garden**—the chief market in London for flowers, fruit and vegetables.

**Thibet**—An extensive plateau north of the Himalayas.

**Bootan** (sometimes Bhutan)—an independent province in the n.e. of India, between Assam and the Himalayas.

**Trissotin**—a gallant who affects poetry in Moliere's play of *Femmes Savantes*.

**Dionysius**—(B.C. 430-367) an Athenian general and *dilletante* in literature.

**Frederic (the Great)**—(1712-86), King of Prussia (1740-86) and a successful general who, however, dabbled in letters.

**Hayley, Wm.**—(1745-1820), poet and dramatist. He wrote a *Life of Cowper*, published in 1808.

**Seward, Wm. Henry**—(1746-99), a now forgotten miscellaneous writer and collector of anecdotes.

**Sheldonian Theatre**—The great hall in Oxford where university degrees are conferred.

**Guildhall**—a civic hall in London where distinguished people are entertained by the city fathers.

**With all his faults . . . obloquy**—a touching passage, one of the few instances of pathos in Macaulay's writings.

**Great Abbey**—Westminster Abbey, where Hastings' accusers, Pitt and Fox, lie buried. Note the beautiful figure, "that temple of silence and reconciliation."

**Great Hall**—Westminster Hall.

**Richelieu**—(1585-1642), a great French statesman and cardinal. The period of his power and influence was from 1624 till his death.

**Cosmo de Medici**—(D. 1574), a statesman of the Florentine Republic, and liberal patron of learning and the fine arts.

# CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE.

[Chief Incidents in Warren Hastings' Career.]

YEAR.	AGE	EVENT.
1600		East India Company granted its first charter.
1623		Massacre of English by the Dutch at Amboyna.
1640		Madras founded; Calcutta, 1645; Bombay, 1665.
1658		Mogul Emperor Aurungzebe began to reign. (Died, 1707.)
1698		English acquire Calcutta by purchase.
1709		Amalgamation of rival East India Companies.
1725		Robert Clive born. (Committed suicide, 1774.)
1732		Warren Hastings born. (Died 1818; age 86.)
		Edmund Burke born. (Died 1797.)
1740		Sir Philip Francis ("Junius?") born. (Died, 1818.)
1742	10	Hastings at Westminster School.
		Dupleix made Governor of French India.
1746		Madras surrenders to French. (Restored 1748.)
1747		Clive enters E. I. Co.'s service as ensign.
1749		Charles James Fox born. (Died 1806.)
1750	18	Hastings arrives in India. Clerk in Bengal.
1751		Clive victorious at Arcot.
1752	20	Hastings sent to trade at Cosimbazar.
1756		Massacre of English in Black Hole at Calcutta.
1757	25	H. prisoner and secret agent of E.I.C. at Moorshedabad.
		Battle of Plassey gained by Clive.
1758		Clive takes Chinsurah from Dutch. Governor of Bengal.
1759		William Pitt (son of Earl of Chatham) born. (Died 1806.)
1760		Clive raised to peerage as Baron Plassey.
		Sir Eyre Coote defeats French at Wandewash.
		George III. King of England. (Died 1820.)
1761	29	Hastings made member of Council at Calcutta.
		Sir Eyre Coote takes Pondicherry from the French.
1763		Revolt of Meer Cossim. Massacre at Patna.
1764	32	Hastings returns to England. Battle of Buxar.
1767		Clive's rule in India terminates.
		(to 1772) Dual system of administration in Bengal.
1769		Letters of Junius commenced; ended 1772.
	37	Hastings returns to India as member of Council at Madras.
1772	40	" made Governor of Bengal.
		" removes Mahommed Reza Khan.
1773		" sells Corah and Allahabad to Oude.
		The Regulating Act passed by British Parliament.
		Sir P. Francis made a member of the Supreme Council at Bengal, and Sir Elijah Impey appointed Chief Justice.
		Supreme Court of Judicature established at Calcutta.
1774	42	Hastings made Governor-General of India.
		English troops lent to conduct Rohilla war.
1775	43	Hastings accused in Council of taking bribes.
1776		Nuncomar condemned by Sir E. Impey and executed.

## CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE—(Continued).

YEAR.	AGE	EVENT.
1777		Hastings quarrels with the Council and the Directors.
1778	46	" marries Baroness Imhoff.
1780	48	Pondicherry captured by Sir Hector Munro. Hastings fights a duel with Sir Philip Francis. (to 1799) Wars with Hyder Ali and Tippoo Saib in Carnatic. Hyder Ali defeated by Sir E. Coote at Porto Novo.
1781		Plunder of Cheyte Sing and the Begums. Benares made subject to the East India Co.
1784		Hastings accused of taking a bribe from Nabob of Oude.
1785	53	Pitt carries his India Bill in Parliament.
1787		Hastings resigns and returns to England.
1788	56	Burke proposes to impeach Hastings.
1789	56	Hastings tried for high crimes and misdemeanors.
1794	62	" acquires ancestral estates at Daylesford.
1795	63	" acquitted, April 23.
1799		End of third Mysore war: Wellington at Seringapatam: Tippoo Saib killed and territory annexed.
1800		Lord Macaulay born.

GOVERNORS AND GOVERNORS-GENERAL OF INDIA  
UNDER THE EAST INDIA COMPANY, 1758-1858.

1757.—Lord Clive, first Governor.	1805.—Marquis of Cornwallis, 2nd Administration.	
1760.—Howell, Mr.	} <i>Interim Gov's.</i>	1806.—Earl of Minto.
Vansittart, Mr.		1815.—Earl of Moira (Marquis of Hastings).
1765.—Spencer, Mr.		1823.—Earl Amherst.
Lord Clive.		1826.—Lord Wm. Cavendish Bentinck.
1767.—Harry Verelst.		1835.—Sir Chas. Metcalfe ( <i>pro tem.</i> )
1769.—John Cartier.		1836.—Lord Auckland.
1772.—Warren Hastings; first Governor-General, 1774.		1842.—Earl of Ellenborough.
1786.—Marquis of Cornwallis.		1844.—Viscount Hardinge.
1793.—Sir John Shore (Lord Teignmouth).		1848.—Marquis of Dalhousie.
1798.—Lord Moruington (Marquis of Wellesley).		1856.—Earl Canning.

## VICEROYS UNDER THE CROWN, 1858-1888.

1858.—Earl Canning.	1876.—Earl of Lytton.
1862.—Lord Elgin.	1880.—Marquis of Ripon.
1864.—Sir John (Lord) Lawrence.	1884.—Earl of Dufferin.
1869.—Earl of Mayo.	1888.—Marquis of Lansdowne.
1872.—Earl of Northbrook.	

**THE**

---

White

(Notes

---

With

---

**Caes**

N

(Also

---

**Ik**

---

Sp

# THE COPP, CLARK CO., Limited.

---

## CLASSICS.

---

### Xenophon's Anabasis, Book III.

White's Grammar School Text and Vocabulary. With Explanatory Notes by JOHN HENDERSON, M.A.

75 Cents.

(Notes only, in separate volume, 35 Cents.)

---

### Homer's Iliad, Book VI.

With Life of Homer, Critical and Explanatory Notes, &c., by  
REV. T. H. L. LEARY, D.C.L.

30 Cents.

---

### Vergil's Aeneid, Book V.

Notes and Vocabulary by JOHN HENDERSON, M.A.

60 Cents.

---

### Caesar's Bellum Gallicum, Books I. & II.

Notes, Vocabulary and Maps by JOHN HENDERSON, M.A.

75 Cents.

(Also in separate volumes, each 50 Cents.)

---

### Kelley's & Giles' Keys to the Classics,

List sent upon application.

---

### Simpson's Latin Prose,

PART I.—CAESARIAN PROSE.

Special Canadian Edition, - - 60 Cents.

## GERMAN.

---

**Riehl's Culturgeschichte,**

PITT PRESS EDITION.

Notes and Index by H. J. WOLSTENHOLME, B.A.

— IN ONE VOLUME WITH —

**Schiller's Der Taucher,**

Notes by W. H. VAN DER SMISSEN, M.A.

\$1.50.

---

**Freitag's Die Journalisten,**

Commentary by WALTER D. TOY, M.A.

40 Cents.

---

## FRENCH.

---

**Enault's Le Chien du Capitaine,**

and **Daudet's La Belle Nivernaise,**

With Notes and Vocabulary by E. J. MCINTYRE,  
St. Catharines Collegiate Institute.

75 Cents.

---

**Erckmann=Chatrain—"Madame Therese,"**

Notes by PROF. F. BÉCHER, Harvard College.

70 Cents.

---

**Labiche—La Grammaire,**

Notes by SCHELE DE VERE, Ph.D., LL.D.

30 Cents.

---

**De Jivas' Introductory French Reader,**

50 Cents.

---

THE COPP, CLARK CO., LTD., TORONTO.

# ENGLISH.

---

## Shakespeare's *Tempest*,

CLARENDON PRESS EDITION.

Notes by W. A. WRIGHT, M.A., LL.D., Trin. Coll., Cambridge.

40 Cents.

---

## Scott's *Ivanhoe*,

BLACK'S EDITION.

With Author's Notes.

15 Cents.

---

## Macaulay's *Warren Hastings*,

With Introduction, Chronological Tables, Critical and  
Explanatory Notes, &c.

— TOGETHER WITH —

Notes on Composition and Analysis of Scott's *Ivanhoe*,

By G. MERCER ADAM

— AND —

GEORGE DICKSON, M.A.,

*Principal Upper Canada Coll.*

40 Cents.

---

## Chaucer's *Prologue*,

CLARENDON PRESS.

Edited by REV. R. MORRIS, LL.D. With additional Notes by  
REV. W. W. SKEAT, Litt. D.

Special Canadian Edition, - - 60 Cents.

---

## Literature, 1890-91,

SELECTIONS FROM LONGFELLOW.

With Life of Longfellow, Notes, &c., by H. I. STRANG, B.A.,  
and A. J. MOORE, B.A.

75 Cents.

---

THE COPP, CLARK CO., LTD., TORONTO.

## **Practical Exercises in Composition,**

By H. I. STRANG, B.A.

25 Cents.

---

## **MATHEMATICS.**

---

### **Elementary Trigonometry,**

By J. B. LOCK, M.A., Fellow of Gonville and Caius College,  
Cambridge.

Special Canada Edition, - - - - \$1.00.

---

### **Book-keeping Blanks,**

Complete.—Containing Day Book, Journal, Ledger, Six Column  
Journal, Cash and Bill Book.

(For use with McLean's High School Book-keeping.)

25 Cents.

---

### **Bi-Lingual Readers,**

FIRST READER—PART I. . . . .	10 Cents.
“ “ PART II. . . . .	15 “
SECOND BOOK, . . . . .	25 “
THIRD “ . . . . .	35 “
LES GRAND INVENTIONS . . . . .	50 “

Authorized by Education Department of Ontario.

---

### **Christian Catechism,**

By PHILIP SCHAFF, D.D., New York, slightly abridged (by permission of the Author) from the edition published by the American S. S. Union.

Per 100 - - - - - \$3.00.

---

**THE COPP, CLARK CO., LTD., TORONTO.**

The Copp, Clark Company, Ltd. School and College Books.

---

**FASQUELLE'S FIRST LESSONS IN FRENCH.**

New and Revised Edition. Enlarged by Prof. E. Roubaud, B.A.

Special Canadian Authorized Edition . . . 65c.

---

**GOODWIN'S CHEMISTRY FOR MEDICAL STUDENTS**

By W. L. Goodwin, D.Sc. (Edin.)

Price, . . . \$1.75

This book comprises not only theoretical but practical Chemistry, and may thus serve as a Text Book for the whole course followed by students of medicine

---

**GREEN'S SHORT HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH PEOPLE.**

Special Canadian Authorized Edition . . . \$1.50

---

**HIGH SCHOOL ZOOLOGY.**

By R. Ramsay Wright, M.A., B.Sc. University College, Toronto.

Authorized by Education Department. Price, . . . 75c.

---

**MACMURCHY AND BROWN'S ELEMENTARY ARITHMETIC.**

Price, . . . 25c.

---

**MAGNUS' LESSONS IN ELEMENTARY MECHANICS**

Price, . . . \$1.00

---

**MOIR'S MAP GEOGRAPHY.**

Containing 12 Coloured Maps.

Price, . . . 25c.

---

**MOIR'S BRITISH HISTORY NOTES.**

Price, . . . 15c.

The Copp, Clark Company, Ltd. School and College Books.

---

**APPLIED PSYCHOLOGY.**

By J. McLELLAN, M.A., LL.D.    ∴    Price    -    \$1.00

---

**BOTANICAL NOTE BOOK**

For the use of Students of Practical Botany.

With a large number of Illustrations.

By F. W. MERCHANT, M.A.

New and Enlarged Edition.    ∴    Price,    -    -    50c.

---

**CHEMICAL NOTE BOOK.**

FOR CLASS USE WITH

**KNIGHT'S H. S. CHEMISTRY,**    .    .    Price 20c.

Containing spaces for observations, conclusions, answers to  
Problems, points worth remarking, etc.

---

**DEMOSTHENES PHILIPPICS, I.-II.**

With Notes by SAMUEL WOODS, M.A.    75c.

---

**HARKNESS' INTRODUCTORY LATIN BOOK.**

Authorized by Education Department.

Uniform in style with the Standard Latin Grammar.

Price    -    -    -    -    50c.

---

**HARKNESS' FIRST GREEK BOOK.**

Authorized by Education Department.

Uniform in style with the Standard Latin Grammar.

Price    -    -    -    -    90c.

---

**HARKNESS' STANDARD LATIN GRAMMAR.**

FOR SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES.

Authorized by Education Department.

Price    -    -    -    -    \$1.00.

HENDERSON'S CLASSICS.

The following Classics with Notes, Vocabulary, etc.

By JOHN HENDERSON, M.A.

CAESAR'S BELLUM GALLICUM. (B. I.)

With Life of Caesar—Notes and Vocabulary.

Price . . . 50c.

CAESAR'S BELLUM BRITANNICUM.

With Life of Caesar—Notes and Vocabulary.

Price . . . 50c.

CICERO IN CATILINAM. (B. I.)

With Life of Cicero—Notes and Vocabulary.

Price, . . . 50c.

CICERO IN CATILINAM. (B. II.)

With Life of Cicero—Notes and Vocabulary.

Price, . . . 50c.

VERGIL'S AENEID (B. I.)

With Life of Vergil—Notes and Vocabulary.

Price, . . . 50c.

VERGIL'S AENEID (B. V.)

With Life of Vergil—Notes and Vocabulary.

Price, . . . 60c.

CAESAR'S BELLUM GALLICUM. (B. I. and II.)

With Life of Caesar—Maps, Notes and Vocabulary, etc.

Price, . . . 75c.

(also in separate volumes, each 50c.)

**HIGH SCHOOL GERMAN GRAMMAR.**

By W. H. VanderSmisen, M.A., and W. H. Fraser, B.A.

Authorized by Education Department.

Price . . . . . 75c.

---

**HIGH SCHOOL GERMAN READER.**

By W. H. VANDERSMISEN, M.A.

Authorized by Education Department.

Price . . . . . 75c.

---

**HIGH SCHOOL CHEMISTRY.**

By A. P. KNIGHT, M.A., M.D.

Authorized by Education Department.

Price . . . . . 75c.

---

**HIGH SCHOOL BOOK-KEEPING AND PRÉCIS  
WRITING.**

By H. S. MACLEAN.

Authorized by Education Department.

Price . . . . . 65c.

---

**HIGH SCHOOL WORD BOOK.**

A Combined Orthoepist, Verbalist and Dictionary of Synonyms.

By J. W. CONNOR, B.A., and G. MERCER ADAM.

Authorized by Education Department.

Price . . . . . 50c.

The Copp, Clark Company, Ltd. School and College Books.

---

**PUBLIC SCHOOL SPELLER AND WORD-BOOK.**

New and Enlarged Edition.

Part IV. contains Latin and Greek Roots, etc.

By G. W. Johnson, Central School, Hamilton.

Containing 272 pages.

Price, . . . 30c.

---

**PUBLIC SCHOOL HISTORY OF ENGLAND AND CANADA**

By G. Mereer Adam and W. J. Robertson, B.A. LL.B.

Authorized by Education Department. Price, . . . 35c.

---

**SIMPLE RULES IN ARITHMETIC.**

For use in 2nd Book Classes.

By R. T. Martin, Head Master, Park School, Toronto.

Price, . . . 10c.

---

**SMITH & MACMURCHY'S ELEMENTARY ARITHMETIC.**

Price, . . . 15c.

Key to same . . . 75c.

---

**UNIVERSAL SCHOOL MAPS.**

Dominion of Canada, 4 ft. 3 x 2 ft. 4,	. . . . .	\$2.50
World on Mercator's Projection,	. . . . .	4.00
World in Hemispheres, 4 ft. 5 x 3 ft. 10,	. . . . .	3.50
Europe,	do. do. . . . .	3.50
Asia,	do. do. . . . .	3.50
Africa,	do. do. . . . .	3.50
North America,	do. do. . . . .	3.50
South America,	do. do. . . . .	3.50
United States,	do. do. . . . .	3.50

**BEAUTIFULLY COLOURED—CLEARLY DEFINED.**

A prominent coast line, clear representation of rivers and mountains, absence of overcrowding, and the clear printing of names, etc., all combine to make the Universal Maps best suited for Schools where clearness is so much desired.

ASK FOR THE UNIVERSAL SCHOOL MAPS.

**The Copp, Clark Company, Ltd. School and College Books.**

---

**ANNOTATED BOOK-KEEPING BLANKS.**

Prepared with special reference to MACLEAN'S HIGH SCHOOL BOOK-KEEPING

Published in four numbers:

No. 1.—Day Book.      No. 2.—Journal.      No. 3.—Ledger.  
No. 4.—Six-Column Journal, Cash and Bill Book.

Each Book contains Hints and Notes as to its use. Price each, 10c.

**ANNOTATED BLANKS, ALSO MADE THREE-IN-ONE.**

Foolscap size.      Retail,      -      -      25c.

---

**CHERRIMAN AND BAKER'S TRIGONOMETRY.**

Price,      -      -      75c.

---

**COPY BOOK OF BUSINESS FORMS AND ACCOUNTS,  
No. 1.**

For Senior Third and Junior Fourth Book Classes.

By McAllister, Clare and Slater.

Price,      -      -      10c.

---

**COPY BOOK OF BUSINESS FORMS AND ACCOUNTS,  
No. 2.**

For Fourth Class and entrance to Coll. Inst. and High Schools.

By McAllister and Clare.

Price,      -      -      10c.

**EXERCISE BOOK** to accompany No. 2,      -      -      10c.

---

**COPY BOOK OF BUSINESS FORMS AND ACCOUNTS,  
No. 3.**

With Forms of Cheques, Drafts, Bills of Exchange, etc., in Tint.  
For Collegiate Institutes and High Schools.

By McAllister, Clare and Slater.

Price,      -      10c.

81

c.

c.

c.

S,

c.

S,

s.

c.

c.

S,

t.

c.